



**PUBLIC ORDER  
EMERGENCY  
COMMISSION**

**COMMISSION  
SUR L'ÉTAT  
D'URGENCE**

**Public Hearing**

**Audience publique**

**Commissioner / Commissaire  
The Honourable / L'honorable  
Paul S. Rouleau**

**VOLUME 4**

**Held at :**

Library and Archives Canada  
Bambrick Room  
395 Wellington Street  
Ottawa, Ontario  
K1A 0N4

Tuesday, October 18, 2022

**Tenue à:**

Bibliothèque et Archives Canada  
Salle Bambrick  
395, rue Wellington  
Ottawa, Ontario  
K1A 0N4

Mardi, le 18 octobre 2022

**INTERNATIONAL REPORTING INC.**

<https://www.transcription.tc/>

(800)899-0006

## II Appearances / Comparutions

Commission Co-lead Counsel	Ms. Shantona Chaudhury Mr. Jeffrey Leon
Commission Senior Counsel	Mr. Frank Au Ms. Erin Dann Mr. Gabriel Poliquin Ms. Natalia Rodriguez Mr. Daniel Sheppard
Commission Regional Counsel	Ms. Mona Duckett Ms. Sacha Paul Ms. Maia Tsurumi
Commission Counsel	Mr. Stephen Armstrong Ms. Misha Boutilier Mr. Eric Brousseau Ms. Sajeda Hedaraly Ms. Alexandra Heine Ms. Nusra Khan Mr. Étienne Lacombe Mr. John Mather Ms. Allison McMahon Mr. Jean-Simon Schoenholz Ms. Dahlia Shuhaibar Mr. Guillaume Sirois-Gingras
Commission Executive Director	Ms. Hélène Laurendeau

### III

## Appearances / Comparutions

Government of Canada

Mr. Robert MacKinnon  
Ms. Donnaree Nygard  
Mr. Brendan van Niejenhuis  
Ms. Andrea Gonsalves  
Mr. Andrew Gibbs

Government of Saskatchewan

Mr. P. Mitch McAdam, K.C.  
Mr. Michael J. Morris, K.C.

Government of Manitoba

Mr. Denis Guenette  
Ms. Coral Lang

Government of Alberta

Ms. Mandy England  
Ms. Stephanie Bowes  
Ms. Hana Laura Yamamoto  
Mr. Peter Buijs  
Ms. Shaheer Meenai

City of Ottawa

Ms. Anne Tardif  
Ms. Alyssa Tomkins

City of Windsor

Ms. Jennifer L. King  
Mr. Michael Finley  
Mr. Graham Reeder

Mr. Peter Sloly

Mr. Tom Curry  
Ms. Rebecca Jones  
Mr. Nikolas De Stefano

## IV

### Appearances / Comparutions

Ottawa Police Service	Mr. David Migicovsky Ms. Jessica Barrow
Ontario Provincial Police	Mr. Christopher Diana Ms. Jinan Kubursi
Windsor Police Service	Mr. Thomas McRae Mr. Bryce Chandler Ms. Heather Paterson
National Police Federation	Ms. Nini Jones Ms. Lauren Pearce Ms. Jen Del Riccio
Canadian Association of Chiefs of Police	Ms. Aviva Rotenberg
CLA/CCCDL/CAD	Mr. Greg DelBigio Ms. Colleen McKeown
Union of British Columbia Indian Chiefs	Ms. Cheyenne Arnold-Cunningham Counsel Meagan Berlin Ms. Mary Ellen Turpel-Lafond
National Crowdfunding & Fintech Association	Mr. Jason Beitchman
Canadian Constitution Foundation and Professor Alford	Ms. Sujit Choudhry Ms. Janani Shanmuganathan Prof. Ryan Alford

## V

### Appearances / Comparutions

Ottawa Coalition of Residents and Businesses	Mr. Paul Champ Ms. Emilie Taman Ms. Christine Johnson
The Democracy Fund, Citizens for Freedom, JCCF Coalition	Mr. Rob Kittredge Mr. Antoine D'Ailly Mr. Alan Honner Mr. Dan Santoro Mr. Hatim Kheir Mr. James Manson
Canadian Civil Liberties Association	Ms. Cara Zwibel Ms. Ewa Krajewska
The Convoy Organizers	Mr. Brendan Miller Ms. Bath-Sheba Van den Berg
Insurance Bureau of Canada	Mr. Mario Fiorino

**VI**  
**Table of Content / Table des matières**

	<b>PAGE</b>
<b><u>MAYOR JIM WATSON, Sworn</u></b>	1
Examination in-Chief by Ms. Natalia Rodriguez	1
Cross-Examination by Mr. Brendan Miller	111
Cross-Examination by Mr. Tom Curry	133
Cross-Examination by Mr. Paul Champ	152
Cross-Examination by Mr. David Migicovsky	172
Cross-Examination by Mr. Brendan van Niejenhuis	177
Cross-Examination by Mr. Alan Honner	194
Cross-Examination by Mr. Sujit Choudhry	200
<b><u>MR. KIM AYOTTE, Sworn</u></b>	208
Examination in-Chief by Ms. Natalia Rodriguez	208
Cross-Examination by Mr. David Migicovsky	235
Cross-Examination by Mr. Brendan Miller:	246
Cross-Examination by Mr. Rob Kittredge	253
Cross-Examination by Mr. Andrew Gibbs	259
Cross-Examination by Ms. Colleen McKeown	267
Cross-Examination by Ms. Alyssa Tomkins	269

Ottawa, Ontario

--- Upon commencing on Tuesday October 18, 2022, at 9:30 a.m.

**THE REGISTRAR:** Order. À l'ordre. The Public Order Emergency Commission is now in session. La Commission sur l'état d'urgence est maintenant ouverte.

**COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Bonjour, good morning. Okay. Today I think we start off, unless there's any preliminary business, I think we start off with the mayor of Ottawa. Is that correct, Ms. Rodriguez? Okay. Go ahead.

**MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** I'm Natalia Rodriguez, senior Commission Counsel, and we would like to call Mr. Mayor Jim Watson.

**THE REGISTRAR:** Mr. Mayor Watson, will you swear on a religious document or do you wish to affirm?

**MAYOR JIM WATSON:** On a Bible, please.

**THE REGISTRAR:** Please take the Bible in your right hand.

For the record, please state your full name and spell it out.

**MAYOR JIM WATSON:** James Alexander Watson, J-A-M-E-S A-L-E-X-A-N-D-E-R W-A-T-S-O-N.

**--- MAYOR JIM WATSON, Sworn:**

**THE REGISTRAR:** Thank you.

**COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Go ahead.

**MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Thank you.

**--- EXAMINATION-IN-CHIEF BY MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:**

**MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Good morning, Mayor Watson. How are you?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'm good. Thank you. Thank  
2 you for ---

3                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Good.

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- the invitation.

5                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Nice to see you again.

6 And you had an interview with Commission Counsel on August 18,  
7 2022, and on September 7<sup>th</sup>, 2022; correct?

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

9                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And you've had a chance  
10 to review the interview summary that was generated from those  
11 interviews?

12                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I did.

13                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Do you have any  
14 corrections at this time to make to that interview summary?

15                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

16                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Thank you. So I'm  
17 just going to pull it up, WTS00000018. And so that's your  
18 witness summary there?

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

20                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So we will enter  
21 that into evidence today. Thank you.

22                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Now I see that you have a  
23 document with you today; is that right?

24                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, I've got our summary of  
25 chronology.

26                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And does it have  
27 any notations on it?

28                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** It does, yes.



1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So I would ask  
2 that you can have the summary of the timeline. And I believe  
3 the timeline you're referring to is -- yeah, so we're going to  
4 take that one.

5                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Okay.

6                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And you can have the  
7 timeline of events as -- yeah, and that is the institution  
8 report of the City of Ottawa with respect to the timeline of  
9 events; correct?

10                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

11                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And you've  
12 indicated that -- are there any notations on that one?

13                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Not this one, no.

14                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Thank you.

15                                 And can you tell us why you're having that with  
16 you today for your testimony?

17                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Just to be clear on the dates,  
18 the sequence of events that took place earlier this year.

19                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So it's a way to  
20 remember the dates?

21                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

22                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Now my  
23 understanding is that you were not involved in the day-to-day  
24 planning and preparation for the convoy's arrival in Ottawa; is  
25 that right?

26                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

27                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And that was left mainly  
28 to the City Manager, Steve Kanellakos, and others within the

1 City; is that right?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And I understand  
4 that you had a briefing with former Chief Sloly and Mr.  
5 Kanellakos on the 26<sup>th</sup> to talk about what to expect in terms of  
6 the convoy's arrival, so this is now before the arrival of the  
7 convoy; is that right?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right, yes.

9 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And can you tell us what  
10 the Chief told you in terms of what to expect?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, the information was not  
12 particularly clear. No one had a real sense of how many  
13 vehicles were coming, whether they were going to stay a long  
14 period of time, what their actual plan was. There was a sense  
15 on the -- the Chief indicated that the group was somewhat  
16 disorganized and did not speak with one voice.

17 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And in terms of scope,  
18 scale, number of vehicles, number of protesters, can you give us  
19 a sense for what you were told?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That they were coming from  
21 three different locations, the west, the east and central Canada  
22 to convene on or near Ottawa, and that they were upset with the  
23 mask mandates, which were primarily, as you know, a provincial  
24 matter, but they were upset with the federal government as well.

25 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And did he give a sense  
26 for how long you could expect them to be in Ottawa?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** My recollection was that they  
28 would be here for one or two days. That was the norm. You

1 know, a lot of people protest in our city, and our police do a  
2 very good job of controlling and managing the situation. And to  
3 the best of my knowledge, we never had a protest in the 25 years  
4 I've been in public service that lasted more than a couple of  
5 days and then they gathered their signs and placards and went  
6 back home.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So it was -- one or two  
8 days was the sense that you got from the Chief in terms of how  
9 long the convoy would be in Ottawa?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, there was a bit of a  
11 moving agenda for the organisers of the convoy because at one  
12 point they had, I believe, Mr. Bernier wanting to speaking, and  
13 then he wasn't able to come on the Friday or the Saturday and  
14 there was push back a day. So there seemed to be some  
15 challenges that they were having as to who was going to speak  
16 and when they were going to speak and that prolonged it.

17 My view at the time was that it would probably  
18 last a couple of days. My understanding was most of these  
19 truckers were independent and if they weren't on the road doing  
20 business and pickups they were losing money, so that they would  
21 in fact go home on Saturday or Sunday, and obviously that did  
22 not happen.

23 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And the Chief  
24 didn't give you any indication that it would be other --  
25 anything other than the weekend?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, we didn't have any  
27 indication. We had a memo or an email from Steve Ball at the  
28 Hotel Association indicating that one of the organisers had come

1 and enquired about a long-term booking of thirty-plus days at a  
2 number of hotels. They wanted, I think, 9,000 to 10,000 hotel  
3 rooms.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And did that concern you  
5 at all?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, it did, except, you  
7 know, when you're making a booking you have to have some  
8 evidence you're going to follow through with it. So simply  
9 asking about booking 11,000 rooms when the city only has about  
10 11,000 rooms at its disposal for tourism industry, I don't think  
11 most took it seriously for the simple reason that there was no  
12 follow up. It was simply asking about rooms and room  
13 availability, and rates I suppose, and then it didn't really  
14 anywhere because my understanding is that the bulk of the people  
15 with large rigs stayed in their cabs, they didn't need hotels.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so in your  
17 discussions with Chief Sloly on the 26th, was there any  
18 discussion about what would be done in the event that the  
19 protestors decided to stay longer than a couple of days?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't recall any other  
21 discussion on that at that point.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Now, at some point  
23 you began to use the term "occupation" in your correspondence.  
24 At what point did you determine that this was no longer a  
25 protest and that it was an occupation?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, a couple of points.  
27 First, when more people started to arrive; and secondly, when  
28 people were not leaving the Parliamentary Precinct. So there

1 were those two points that really brought to light the fact that  
2 this was going to more of an occupation as opposed to a protest.

3 As I said, the police in our city are very used  
4 to handling large protests, and large visits of state leaders  
5 and so on, but nothing of this magnitude has ever been seen,  
6 quite frankly, in any city that I'm aware of in Canada in the  
7 last 25 years.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So is it fair to say by  
9 Monday, the 31st, after that first weekend, when the majority of  
10 the trucks were still there, that that's when you determined  
11 that they were not going to leave anytime soon?

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Thereabouts, either --  
13 whether it's the Monday or the Tuesday, and then certainly that  
14 was solidified in my mind that they weren't going to leave on  
15 the weekends. When the weekends started to create this very  
16 tense situation where people were coming in from all over the  
17 region, and in fact, different parts of the country to come and  
18 support the protestors, and that's where the havoc and the chaos  
19 was created in our communities.

20 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And was there ever a  
21 discussion that you had with either Chief Sloly or the deputy  
22 chiefs about blocking access to the additional convoys that were  
23 coming that second weekend to join the original protest?

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't recall being in any  
25 meeting when that was discussed.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Did you raise the issue?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** My bigger concern at that  
28 time, from recollection, was what can we do to ensure that the

1 trucks don't go into the residential areas? Because we knew  
2 that the impact that would have. Because we'd seen in the first  
3 couple of days the constant horn honking, and they had some  
4 train whistles on some of the trucks, and there was just unruly  
5 behaviour on the part of these people who had come and basically  
6 occupied our downtown.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So it wasn't a concern  
8 that there were additional convoys that were coming to join to  
9 kind of expand the footprint of the original convoy?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I think there was  
11 concern, absolutely, because when you saw hundreds and then it  
12 turned out thousands of people arriving with different pickups  
13 and 18-wheelers and so on, that this was going to be bigger than  
14 any of us had imagined.

15 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. But there wasn't a  
16 discussion to try and prevent that from happening?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Not in my presence, to the  
18 best of my recollection?

19 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. Now, I want to  
20 take you to a document, which is a readout of a call that you  
21 had with the Prime Minister on January 31st, and it's  
22 SSM.CAN.NSC.00002812.

23 And so you had a call with the Prime Minister on  
24 the 31st; is that right?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And how did this call  
27 come about? Did he reach out to you, or did you reach out to  
28 him?

1           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** To be honest, I don't recall  
2 whether it was me to him or him to me. I'm not sure.

3           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. If we can just  
4 make that bigger so we can see.

5           Okay. So you say, "Hi". And as we know, these  
6 are summaries of the call, it's not a transcript, but it gives  
7 you a sense for what's being said.

8           And if we go to -- right.

9           So JW is when you're speaking, PM is when the  
10 Prime Minister is speaking. And so the second thing -- second  
11 section there before the redacted portion, the second sentence,  
12 third sentence, you said:

13                                 "These people had their time and need  
14                                 to move on. We have been trying to get  
15                                 this across to the chief of police."

16           Do you see that?

17           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

18           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And when you say "these  
19 people" are you speaking about the protestors?

20           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

21           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And you say:

22                                 "We have been trying to get this across  
23                                 to the chief of police."

24           So this is now Monday, the 31st, so right after  
25 the first weekend. And so what discussions did you have with  
26 the Chief of Police about this issue, about letting them or  
27 asking them to move on?

28           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I was interested in what

1 the plan of action from the police was going to be in order to  
2 clear out the downtown core because my sense was that this was  
3 not shrinking in size, as people started to go back home, it was  
4 growing in size. So everyone could see that. And I -- you  
5 know, I stressed to the police -- as you know, we can't direct  
6 the police on what to do, but certainly in conversations I had  
7 with Chief Sloly, he understood very well the importance of  
8 getting this situation resolved sooner than later because it  
9 would grow into a bigger issue.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So you had discussions  
11 with Chief Sloly over that weekend or on the Monday?

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sometime in that period, I  
13 don't know if it was a Sunday or a Monday, but you know, I was  
14 in contact almost on a regular basis with someone from the  
15 police service, whether it was the Chief or the Deputy, Bell.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so at some point, you  
17 told him it's time to move on, we need to get these people out  
18 of here. Is that right?

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I -- as I said, I can't  
20 direct the police, but certainly I asked the questions, you  
21 know, "What is the game plan to move forward?", and he -- the  
22 Chief said that they're working on one, and I relayed that to  
23 the Prime Minister.

24 He -- the Prime Minister wanted to get a sense of  
25 what was going on on the ground, and how this was affecting our  
26 city, in particular, our residential community and the small  
27 business community. Because as you know, we just got out of a  
28 lockout from COVID, and restaurants and businesses could start



1 opening, and then all of a sudden we have another lockdown  
2 imposed really by the occupiers who came here to disrupt our  
3 quality of life.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And at the bottom  
5 there...

6 If we can just move it up a little bit. No,  
7 sorry, at the bottom. Yeah.

8 It says, "The turning point...", so right after  
9 the redacted portion, you say:

10 "The turning point is the [T]erry [F]ox  
11 statue, the tomb, Shepard[s] of [G]ood  
12 [H]ope. People just can't fathom how  
13 this is acceptable."

14 And so you're referring to the incidences that  
15 took place over the weekend with respect to the war -- National  
16 War Memorial and the Terry Fox statue; is that right?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, I think what was  
18 happening was disgraceful. We had some people dancing on the  
19 Tomb of the Unknown Soldier, we had other people urinating at  
20 the Cenotaph, we had a group that went and stole meals from the  
21 Shepards of Good Hope, we had "End the Mandate" placards put on  
22 the Terry Fox statue. It was completely despicable behaviour on  
23 the part of these individuals.

24 We welcome protestors who are respectful of the  
25 law and respectful of our communities. The vast majority of  
26 these people and that kind of behaviour were not being  
27 respectful, and I think were hurting their cause, quite frankly.  
28 When you saw, you know, the Shepards of Good Hope, who do such

1 good work in the -- in Lower Town, the Byward Market, having  
2 people bully their way in to get a free meal, that was just  
3 abhorrent.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And further down, you  
5 say:

6 "[Chief] of police said it's so  
7 volatile, but kept under control so  
8 far. Trucks are starting to leave, but  
9 some diehards chained themselves to  
10 this. Unfortunate for people living in  
11 residential neighbourhood. They just  
12 doing themselves a disservice."

13 Which is what you just said right now. "Chief of  
14 police spoke to Chief Lucki, and we need a few more sources."  
15 Can you explain this last part? "Chief of police spoke to Chief  
16 Lucki, and we need a few more sources." What was this  
17 discussion.

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I think it's -- it should say  
19 Commissioner Lucki and a few more resources. I think they just  
20 left off R-E ---

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so what was  
22 the discussion then?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- off resource.

24 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And what was the  
25 discussion around this point then?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** We need -- our police service  
27 on its own was completely outnumbered. We could not deal with  
28 it just as an Ottawa Police issue. We needed the support of the

1 other orders of government.

2 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so, you were aware  
3 that Chief Sloly had reached out to Commissioner Lucki by this  
4 time to ask for more resources. Is that right?

5 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

6 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so by the Monday it  
7 was clear that OPS did not have the resources that it needed to  
8 handle this demonstration. Is that right?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

10 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so, in this call  
11 there were no specific requests for assistance from -- you  
12 requesting from the Prime Minister or the Prime Minister  
13 offering anything specific back to you. Is that right?

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I did relay the fact  
15 that we needed more resources and that once we had the number --  
16 because at that point early on we did not have the exact number  
17 that Chief Sloly required to clear out the individuals in  
18 Centretown, Lower Town, Overbrook, Forbes, as well as the ByWard  
19 market.

20 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** But it was very clear -- I  
22 made it very clear, and the Prime Minister fully understood that  
23 the RCMP we're going to have to be involved. They obviously  
24 have a very significant presence in Ottawa in any event,  
25 responsible for the IP security and public buildings and so on.

26 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. Okay. So if we  
27 just go to last page then, just to kind of see how the call ends  
28 off. And it's -- the Prime Minister says:

1 "the remainders will have no choice but  
2 to incite as a counterbalance, so we  
3 all have to be careful.  
4 ...we really appreciate your support for  
5 cities.  
6 ...thank you for your steadfast  
7 leadership and your whole team."

8 And so that was the end of the call there.

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

10 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** All right. And If I can  
11 take you to OTT3855? And this is a February 3rd e-mail that  
12 you sent to City Council to update them, it looks like on the  
13 efforts of the city.

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct. That's right.

15 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And this is now Thursday  
16 before the second weekend. And you indicate that you had a call  
17 with the Prime Minister on the 31<sup>st</sup>. If we can just go down a  
18 little bit, yeah. So and then in that third paragraph you say:

19 "This morning, the City Solicitor and I  
20 had a discussion with the team from Go  
21 Fund Me to request that the funds  
22 raised so far remain frozen until the  
23 end of the occupation."

24 Can you explain how the discussion with Go Fund  
25 Me came about and what action was taken?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, as you know, the Go Fund  
27 Me campaign by the organizers was very successful, it was  
28 raising millions of dollars and that was, I think, one of the

1 reasons why more people started to arrive thinking they would  
2 get a cut of that money for their gas, and mileage, and food and  
3 so on, if they needed places to stay.

4                   And so I was approached at some point in that  
5 time frame from the consulting firm that represented Go Fund Me  
6 in Canada, to see if I would be amenable to having a meeting  
7 with senior Go Fund Me people to discuss and to let them know  
8 that the funds they were collecting we're very much harming our  
9 city and in my opinion engaged in illegal activities. So the  
10 meeting was arranged and we had a number of people on the call.  
11 They had also spoken I believe earlier in the day, or after my  
12 call with, I think it was Chief Bell, so he gave them a more  
13 detailed situational report as to what was happening in our  
14 city, and why we felt that these funds should be frozen and  
15 ultimately sent back to the individuals, because those dollars  
16 were keeping the convoy going.

17                   **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And what happened after  
18 that meeting?

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I can tell you during  
20 the meeting I think they underestimated how big an issue this  
21 was, and I told them this was certainly hurting the reputational  
22 -- or their reputation, because they were funding a group that  
23 was very much involved in activities that were harmful to our  
24 city and our country. And I can't recall the exact time, but a  
25 few days later I believe, there was a decision by Go Fund Me to  
26 freeze the funds, and I lauded them for doing that.

27                   **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And was there any  
28 subsequent calls after the initial call with Go Fund Me? Did

1 you have any more discussions with them?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't believe I did.  
3 Whether some of my staff did, that may have been the case, or  
4 with their consultant. But they also, I believe, started to  
5 send the money back to individuals.

6 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so, if we look at  
7 the following paragraph, it says:

8 "In the last hour, I had a very good  
9 discussion with federal Public Safety  
10 Minister Marco Mendicino, where I  
11 reiterated our City's call for  
12 additional resources to support our  
13 officers responding to this  
14 demonstration on the ground. He  
15 assured me that our request for  
16 assistance was being given the highest  
17 consideration by Commissioner Lucki,  
18 and he offered his ongoing support  
19 until we see an end to the occupation."

20 So by this time, February 3rd, that's the  
21 language you are using there. And when you say you reiterated  
22 the City's call for additional resources, when did you make the  
23 original call for resources? Because this is February 3rd and  
24 you're referring to reiterating the call for resources, are you  
25 referring to the 31st call with the Prime Minister, or was there  
26 another call for resources between the 31st and February 3<sup>rd</sup>?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, the very first time that  
28 I had asked for additional resources was with the Prime Minister

1 on the phone call, and he was -- he understood completely the  
2 situation we're in. He lives in Ottawa, obviously, and he was  
3 seeing first hand the challenges our city was facing. So he was  
4 the first person that I contacted. This call with Marco  
5 Mendicino, or Minister Mendicino, I may have had another phone  
6 call with him, I can't recall. But certainly, he was very,  
7 very, well aware that we needed additional resources. He asked  
8 how many, I said that's being worked on by our chief of police.  
9 And I also indicated that we were going to reach out to the OPP  
10 as well, and that Chief Sloly who had very good contacts with  
11 municipal leaders would reach out to municipal police forces as  
12 well.

13                   And I certainly call the number of my mayor  
14 colleagues across the country, bringing them up to speed on what  
15 was happening and said that, you may be getting a call from your  
16 Chief of Police, and we hope that you can help us during this  
17 difficult time. And the municipal police forces were very,  
18 very, responsive, and we appreciate their support in our time of  
19 need.

20                   **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So in terms of a  
21 specific request for resources, this February 3rd call with  
22 Minister Mendicino would have been the first time that you asked  
23 for resources from -- other than in January 31st call, which was  
24 not as specific, this would have been the request that you made  
25 for additional RCMP officers?

26                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, I don't want to mislead  
27 you. I may have had another call beforehand, but I can't  
28 recall, and I don't have notes to that effect. But we may have

1 had another call, but certainly this call and this memo that I  
2 sent to colleagues on City Council was to deal with the  
3 immediate, and the short term, and the long term.

4 And if you just scroll down, one of the other  
5 parallel discussions I was -- or scroll up rather -- parallel  
6 discussions I was having was with the provincial Minister of  
7 Finance, as well as a Treasury Board President, Mona Fortier and  
8 Peter Bethlenfalvy, because we knew that a number of businesses  
9 were going to be severely impacted and we needed to receive not  
10 only officers to bring the situation under control, but in the  
11 mid term we needed financial support to help those businesses  
12 that were suffering.

13 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And were there, at this  
14 time by February 3rd, provincial -- discussions with the  
15 provinces beyond the assistance to the businesses that you've  
16 discussed? Any other requests for assistance other than that?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, at some point I know  
18 Chief Sloly would have been in touch with his counterpart at the  
19 OPP.

20 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Sorry, I mean with  
21 respect to your discussions, or your requests.

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I may have had -- at one point  
23 I had a discussion with Minister Lisa McLeod and indicated to  
24 her we needed support, and she was very appreciative of the  
25 situation, and she said she would relay that back to her  
26 colleague, the Solicitor General.

27 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And what kind of support  
28 were you looking for in that discussion?



1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Boots on the ground. Police  
2 officers.

3                   **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** OPP officers?

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** OPP and RCMP.

5                   **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** But to the province of course,  
7 OPP, yes.

8                   **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And do you know  
9 when that call with Lisa MacLeod took place?

10                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't recall. It was some  
11 time in that general area of when the memo went out.

12                  **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so her  
13 response was ---

14                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** But she was ---

15                  **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- we'll take it --  
16 I'll take it back and we will look at it.

17                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, she was very helpful  
18 because she to lived in Ottawa and she was seeing the first  
19 hand. I think one of the challenges that we faced with this is  
20 that people who live away from where this terrible situation was  
21 taking place didn't really have a full -- not everyone, but some  
22 didn't have a full appreciation for how horrific this situation  
23 was. We have about 18,000 people that live in these areas.  
24 This is not just Parliament Hill. This is Centretown. This is  
25 the ByWard Market. It's Lower Town, Vanier, Overbrook, Forbes,  
26 having an impact on a wider part of the city.

27                                 And I think, you know, people started to realize  
28 this was turning into a very volatile situation when we started

1 seeing fireworks going off, and hot tubs brought in, and the  
2 behaviour I told you about, those four or five incidents. And,  
3 you know, the public who were living here understood fully that  
4 this was a horrific situation and the sooner it got resolved,  
5 the better it was for everyone.

6 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah. And at the bottom  
7 as well, if we see the end of the letter there:

8 "A number of colleagues have suggested to  
9 me, and I have agreed, that a Special  
10 Council meeting be called to discuss the  
11 impact of the truck convoy demonstration  
12 on our residents and businesses. The  
13 Clerk will be issuing a Notice of Special  
14 meeting before the weekend for the meeting  
15 to be held [...] on Monday, February 7."

16 So and eventually a Special Meeting was convened  
17 for the 7<sup>th</sup>. Why was that not convened sooner than the 7<sup>th</sup>? It  
18 seems that by the 7<sup>th</sup>, you're almost 10 days into this situation.

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, a number of factors,  
20 availability of individuals that the Council wanted to speak to.  
21 No sense in having a Meeting of Council if the Chief wasn't  
22 there, if Steve Kanellakos wasn't available. This seemed to be  
23 a date that worked well. Everyone was working around the clock,  
24 literally, trying to resolve the situation. And one of my  
25 objectives was to try to minimize the number of opportunities  
26 that we dragged the Police Chief and his senior command in  
27 because they had work to do back at their operations centre.

28 And so this was a day that appeared to work for

1 almost everyone, and that was the day the Clerk circulated the  
2 notice about.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And let's speak now about  
4 the Declaration of the State of Emergency of February 6<sup>th</sup>. And  
5 I'm going to take you to OTT4231. And this is the Declaration  
6 of the State of Emergency that you issued? Is that right?

7 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And why was this done on  
9 February 6<sup>th</sup>? What was the tipping point or the reason why it  
10 was necessary at this point in time?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well there were a lot of  
12 people asking, up to that point, including Members of Council,  
13 and members of the public, and members of the media, why didn't  
14 we declare a State of Emergency on the first weekend?

15 There's a little bit of an urban myth or  
16 misconception about what a municipal state of emergency is. It  
17 has very little impact on public safety. It really is an  
18 administrative tool that allows the City, for instance, to  
19 bypass the procurement policy of the City of Ottawa.

20 A good example is during the pandemic, I declared  
21 a State of Emergency and it allowed us to go and get personal  
22 protection equipment without going through a tender process of  
23 the top three and so on. So it made those kinds of decisions  
24 quicker, it allowed the City Manager to take people from one  
25 branch of the City in a different collective agreement and move  
26 them into another area. We needed people, for instance, to  
27 administer needles and do COVID-19 tests. And, you know, if you  
28 had a job that was not essential to that, we needed extra

1 people.

2                   So I think it was, in some ways, to give some  
3 comfort to the public that, yes, we consider this an emergency,  
4 but we were constantly explaining and trying to allow people to  
5 understand that this really did not have any impact on the  
6 overall removal of individuals.

7                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But beyond the potential  
8 measures that were made available to you as a result of this  
9 declaration, it's also, as you say, an important signal, or it's  
10 symbolic in a way, and it allows others to understand that the  
11 City considers that it is beyond the capacity of the City to  
12 deal with the emergency?

13                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, but on every occasion  
14 that I've declared a State of Emergency, it's been on the advice  
15 of our City Manager, and the City Manager brought this to me at  
16 that time and we had the Clerk draft the resolution and I signed  
17 it.

18                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Did you seek advice prior  
19 to February 6<sup>th</sup> as to whether you should declare a State of  
20 Emergency?

21                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I would have mentioned to  
22 Steve K, "Let me know when you think it's necessary." And, you  
23 know, he came to me, I can't remember the exact day, it was  
24 probably the day before this was signed, on January 15<sup>th</sup>, I guess  
25 -- no, it's later than that. And it was on his advice and the  
26 clerk prepared the document and I signed it and released it to  
27 the public.

28                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so what discussions

1 did you have with Steve Kanellakos about using this as a way to  
2 engage the Province?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well I think there was some  
4 discussion with my Chief of Staff and Steve Kanellakos that  
5 there was -- this may act as a catalyst to get the other two  
6 Orders of Government to move. I didn't see it that way, but  
7 they felt it might act to push the Province to do their own  
8 declaration and to put more pressure on the Province to come to  
9 the table.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So I'm going to  
11 take you to ONT311. It's a Summary Call Between Canada,  
12 Ontario, and the City of Ottawa. And I believe this is what  
13 they would refer to as situational awareness meetings.

14 And if we could just zoom into that?

15 And so Steve Kanellakos is present at this  
16 meeting, along with Deputy Minister Rob Stewart and others, and  
17 it says there it's attributed to him:

18 "Steve Kanellakos, City Manager from  
19 Ottawa, provided an update from the city's  
20 perspective."

21 And in bold there:

22 "Ottawa Mayor Jim Watson is going to  
23 declare a local emergency in the City of  
24 Ottawa at 4:30pm. The expressed intent of  
25 this declaration is to put pressure on the  
26 Premier to exercise powers to resolve  
27 this."

28 Based on what you said, you said that this was

1 mainly for procurement. Is this bolded sentence overstated or  
2 was that the express intention of declaring the State of  
3 Emergency?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, my understanding was it  
5 was Mr. Kanellakos felt that this was -- would be helpful to  
6 prod the Province into being more hands on in the situation.

7 I didn't happen to see it that way, but I'm not  
8 disputing the fact that I believe it did help, because later on  
9 in this crisis, the Province did declare a State of Emergency  
10 under their provincial powers, and the Federal Government  
11 brought in, of course, the *Emergencies Act*.

12 So did the City consider that the Province wasn't  
13 engaged enough in finding a solution?

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

15 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And why was that?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, Minister Blair suggested  
17 that we have a tripartite table where the Federal, Provincial,  
18 Municipal Government elected leaders could get together, share  
19 information, bring forward any new information that we should  
20 have at our disposal, and the Province rejected that. They  
21 didn't feel it was necessary to have three Orders of Government  
22 at the political level to have this table.

23 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so when you  
24 say that -- or when you deemed that the Province wasn't doing  
25 enough, it was because they weren't coming to this tripartite  
26 table? Is that right?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, a couple of things.  
28 They weren't coming to the table and we were having difficulty

1 convincing the Provincial officials the need to have significant  
2 more OPP officers on the ground for two reasons.

3 First of all, at some point it was going to have  
4 to be a police operation to clean out Wellington Street and the  
5 adjoining communities, and that was important.

6 And secondly, the -- we needed the Province on  
7 board because, as you know, municipalities are the creature of  
8 the Province. We don't have all the powers that people think we  
9 do as Mayor, or as Council, and we need to show a united front,  
10 that all of us are legitimately concerned about the challenges  
11 facing our residential communities, our small business  
12 community, and we needed to move forward.

13 So yes, it was frustrating that the Province was  
14 not as responsive.

15 I can say though, in fairness, once they did get  
16 engaged, they were very good partners. The OPP was very  
17 helpful. But it was getting to that stage.

18 And as I mentioned, I believe in our interview,  
19 the Solicitor General at the provincial level seemed to believe  
20 that there were 1,500 OPP officers on the ground, which was not  
21 true at all, and I checked with our police officials. I said,  
22 "How many OPP today?" And they said 50 to 55. So they -- the  
23 Solicitor General kept repeating that there were 1,500 police  
24 officers. You'd know if there were 1,500 OPP officers. You  
25 would see them.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah.

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** There weren't.

28 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And we'll get to

1 that in a second.

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sure.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But I just wanted to  
4 point out that the tripartite meetings took place on February  
5 7<sup>th</sup>, 8<sup>th</sup>, and 10<sup>th</sup>. So on the 6<sup>th</sup> of February, which is this  
6 meeting here, that would not have been a reason to want to  
7 engage the Province, because those tripartite meetings had not  
8 taken place yet, so ---

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, well there were  
10 tripartite meetings at the staff level and there was the  
11 tripartite group we tried to get together with the Federal  
12 Ministers, Mendicino and Blair, and myself, and we hoped  
13 Minister Jones.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

15 So we're going to -- we'll look at those in a  
16 minute. Further down it says,

17 "The Mayor [is --] Jim Watson is  
18 feeling the pressure and want[s] this  
19 issue to be pivoted back to Ontario and  
20 Canada.

21 The City of Ottawa is looking for a way  
22 out."

23 Can -- are you able to explain -- this is  
24 something that Steve Kanellakos said in a meeting, but he is  
25 saying that you're feeling the pressure and you want the issue  
26 pivoted back to Ontario and Canada. Can you expand on that?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, the -- of course, I was  
28 under pressure, but my bigger concern were the residents who



1 were under much more pressure than I was, living through this  
2 hell. In terms of Steve Kanellakos indicating we wanted Ontario  
3 and Canada to be involved was that, first of all, we knew that  
4 none of the mandates that they were protesting had anything to  
5 do with the City of Ottawa or any municipality. They were all  
6 provincially run or federally run. Secondly, we did not have  
7 the resources, we didn't have enough police officers to continue  
8 doing all of the rest of the work of patrolling Ottawa streets,  
9 and as you know, we're 2600 square kilometres, so you couldn't  
10 take every officer away from Kanata and Orleans, Vanier and so  
11 on and put them in the downtown core. So pivot to Ottawa -- or  
12 pivot back to Ontario and Canada was to say please come to the  
13 table, we need your help.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And if I can take  
15 you to OTT18172?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** What date is that?

17 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** This is a February 6<sup>th</sup>  
18 email from it looks like OPS to you and to Chair Deans. So it's  
19 from James Armbruster. I believe he's with the OPP.

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, it would be ---

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Or the OPS, sorry?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, he was my EA.

23 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Oh, okay. I'm sorry.  
24 And that's to you and to some other people in your office.

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, I was reading, it says  
26 to James Armbruster from me on what I'm seeing.

27 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** I'm looking at the one  
28 above. But in any event, if we go down -- yeah, you're looking

1 at the one underneath it.

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah, sorry, and if we go  
4 down to the original one, okay, that's -- okay. Perfect. So if  
5 we go up to see the two? So this one is from the Ottawa Police  
6 Service, John Steinbachs.

7 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And it's to you and to  
9 Diane Deans, Serge from your office and other people there from  
10 the OPS, et cetera.

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And it says,

13 "Chair Deans and Mayor Watson,  
14 Please find below the list of Ottawa  
15 Police Service asks to the Federal,  
16 Provincial and Municipal levels of  
17 government that was requested yesterday  
18 by the Board. These asks are designed  
19 to assist with the management and safe  
20 conclusion of the demonstration."

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right, and what date is that?

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** This is February 6. So  
23 it's ---

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Okay.

25 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- the day that you  
26 declared the state of emergency.

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

28 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then it says,

1 "The Chief is requesting a meeting as  
2 soon as possible to discuss. We are  
3 available this evening."

4 And if we go down to see what the list of asks  
5 is, there's some things there for the City to do and it looks  
6 like then the Chief was asking the City to assist in several  
7 ways that are reflected there; is that right?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

9 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And one of those points,  
10 the third bullet point on the second page there, it says --  
11 yeah, sorry, if we go up? Yeah. Where did it --

12 "Convene financial institutions,  
13 insurance companies, gas companies,  
14 trucking companies, trucking  
15 associations and local BIAs to restrict  
16 material and financial support to  
17 demonstrators."

18 Can you explain what the -- what was being asked  
19 of the City in that point?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** On that particular bullet  
21 point?

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yes.

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's something you'd have to  
24 ask Chief Sloly because it was his request, but my understanding  
25 was that they wanted to try to see if they could stop, for  
26 instance, gas stations from filling up jerry cans because we  
27 knew that was the transportation method by members of the convoy  
28 to keep the rigs running in the cold weather. So, you know, we

1 also had I know over the course of this period, I was invited to  
2 I think five or so meetings with different business groups,  
3 including BIAs, and it never came up at those meetings that I  
4 was at that we were asking their merchants to stop selling  
5 supplies and so on. So that's something that the Chief asked  
6 for. I'm not entirely sure what benefit it would be, but I  
7 relied on his good judgment.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And was that done? Did  
9 the City take any steps towards those things?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't believe so because our  
11 number one preoccupation was to end the occupation and bring the  
12 streets back under control of the City of Ottawa. So you can  
13 only do so much. There are only so many balls in the air that  
14 you can juggle in order to get these issues resolved. But I  
15 don't believe, certainly I was not involved in contacting any  
16 financial institutions, for instance, aside from the GoFundMe  
17 discussion we had.

18 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And in terms of  
19 insurance companies, was that part of the discussion that was  
20 being had with the province to be able to restrict the  
21 commercial licenses and insurance of the participants?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, but that may have taken  
23 place before the formal request because we were basically trying  
24 to find any mechanism or method that could help us encourage the  
25 truckers to leave. And one of the suggestions that I believe a  
26 member of Council brought to my attention was there's a separate  
27 licensing regime and insurance regime for trucks. Could those  
28 organizations through MTO, Ministry of Transportation of

1 Ontario, actually use those tools to basically force the trucks  
2 to get out or there'd be consequences to their actions of  
3 illegally blocking our streets. And the Ministry of  
4 Transportation did not follow through on that. They didn't seem  
5 to think that was a reasonable idea or maybe they didn't think  
6 it was a good idea.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So you had a call with  
8 the representatives from the Ministry of Transportation; is that  
9 right?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** It wouldn't have been me. It  
11 would have been some member of staff, but not me personally, no.

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So you were not on  
13 those calls, but it was reported back to you that they didn't  
14 think it was a good idea?

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Did you have any  
17 understanding as to why they didn't think it was a good idea?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, there was -- they seemed  
19 to think that it would -- they couldn't do what we were asking  
20 them to do, so there seemed to be a bit of a contradiction in  
21 terms of what we thought was available under provincial law and  
22 what they were telling us was not available. And I think at one  
23 point, someone said it wouldn't make any difference. This was a  
24 group that was digging in and having a, you know, a paper  
25 exchange of rules and laws, and by-laws was not going to move  
26 this group at all.

27 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And then the final  
28 point that's on the top of that page there,

1 "Daily emergency operations centre  
2 meeting[s] to coordinate whole of city  
3 response, including daily public  
4 briefings led and coordinated by the  
5 city, so that the police can focus on  
6 operations."

7 I don't believe this was ever done. Are you able  
8 to confirm that? Did the City have daily briefings?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Not public briefings. There  
10 are a number of press conferences that were held by both myself,  
11 and Chair Deans, and Chief Sloly, and the City Manager. So we  
12 did make ourselves available, not on a daily basis, when new  
13 information arrived. We weren't going to have a press  
14 conference for the sake of having a press conference if there  
15 was no new information. But there certainly were a series. I  
16 remember seeing, and I think we talked about it in an interview,  
17 a series of memos that went out over the course of the event,  
18 updating members of Council and the public.

19 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** So it was ---

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But this says daily  
22 public briefing, so I imagine that's for the public.

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, well, I guess the public  
24 briefing would have been the press conferences that were carried  
25 on the City's social media networks.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then under advocacy,  
27 it says,

28 "Mayor to play advocacy role with other

1                                   jurisdictions on below asks:"

2                                   So there it talks about the 1800 officers, which  
3 you did advocate for in your letter of February 7<sup>th</sup>, coauthored  
4 by Chair Deans.

5                                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

6                                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And it also says on the  
7 third bullet point, "professional mediation and negotiation  
8 capacity." Can you explain what this was about? What were they  
9 asking for there?

10                                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, again, I'm at a bit of a  
11 disadvantage because these are not my requests. These are the  
12 requests that were sent to Chair Deans and I in an effort to  
13 write to the Prime Minister and the Minister of Public Safety as  
14 well as the Premier and the Solicitor General to seek the 1800  
15 additional staffing and enforcement. We were pushing the police  
16 because one of the challenges we had was up until this letter  
17 came, or this memo came from the Chief, we did not have an exact  
18 number that was being requested of the two other orders of  
19 government. So this was something that Chair Deans and I pushed  
20 for because we needed that number to go back to our federal and  
21 provincial counterparts to say, all right, you asked for a  
22 number. Here it is and here's how it's divided. So on the  
23 issue of mediation, again, I can only suggest it may have been  
24 they wanted to have some capacity to go and try to mediate the  
25 safe removal of all of the trucks, but that would be something  
26 the Chief would have to ask ---

27                                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. So the Chief --  
28 was the Chief asking you then to engage a professional mediator

1 for that purpose, to try and deescalate the situation with the  
2 protesters?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, again, I'm not sure the  
4 intent or why it was -- I think it's under advocacy, but my  
5 understanding was that these were requests for our staff. The  
6 one request that was for myself to play as really Bullet  
7 Number 1 to get those 1,800 resources.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then, if I can take  
9 you to OTT20707.

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And what date is that?

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** This is on February 7th.  
12 It's the next day after that email from the OPS ---

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- the requests. There  
15 is an email on February 7th, and it looks like...

16 If you go down.

17 It looks like Councillor Egli is saying:

18 "Serge, here's a quick and dirty draft.  
19 Jean is fine with the Mayor seconding  
20 the motion."

21 And then there is -- this is a draft of a wording  
22 for a motion, and there's a lot of "whereas, whereas", and then  
23 it says at the bottom:

24 "Therefore, be it resolved that the  
25 Mayor supported by City Council,  
26 formally request that the Federal  
27 Government appoint an independent  
28 mediator forthwith to assist in



1 de-escalating the protest as well as  
2 the orderly removal of the protesters  
3 and their vehicles from the City of  
4 Ottawa."

5 So is this in -- is this the response to the  
6 request from OPS to engage a professional mediator?

7 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't believe so. I think  
8 it may have been done almost on a parallel basis. It was --  
9 Councillor Egli that I believe drafted it, and the Jean is a  
10 Jean, Jean Cloutier, who was going to move it.

11 I checked earlier this week because I saw this  
12 email, I hadn't seen it before, but it never went to City  
13 Council, it was a draft. And I know that at some point in that  
14 period I had also suggested publicly would there be a role for  
15 the Federal Government to appoint a distinguished Canadian who  
16 could go in and mediate and resolve this. The idea was not  
17 supported at all by the Federal Government. I referenced it, I  
18 believe, in a CTV interview.

19 But I don't think the two were connected, even  
20 though the subject is the same. I think Councillor Cloutier, to  
21 his credit, and Councillor Egli were trying to come up with some  
22 reasonable suggestion to try to bring and end to this.

23 Because I think, if I can put it in context,  
24 every member of Council, whether you lived in the downtown core  
25 and represented it or not, were feeling overwhelmed and under  
26 siege by constituents and by people from across the country  
27 harassing members of Council. And I think all members of  
28 Council, to their credit, were trying to do their very best to

1 come up with sensible ideas that they could present to us,  
2 including the Chief and the City Manager and myself and my  
3 office, to see if this would help resolve the situation. So all  
4 members of Council, in good faith, were trying to do what they  
5 thought was best.

6 And in this particular case, I don't believe this  
7 motion, I know for a fact it didn't go to Council, so it was  
8 just a draft, and I suspect it probably didn't go to Council  
9 because the quick response I received from the Federal  
10 Government was "We're not going to appoint a mediator."

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And do you know  
12 why they didn't want to appoint a mediator?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I can only speculate. So I  
14 shouldn't speculate, I don't know. You'd have to ask that  
15 question.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Well, did they tell you  
17 why? Did they say why they were not interested in this?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Again, I -- you know, I have a  
19 vague recollection that they -- that I raised it with either  
20 Minister Blair or Mendicini [sic], but I can't recall the  
21 context of why they were against it.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And I'm going to  
23 take you to OTT5513. This is now February 7th, and as we saw  
24 earlier, Chief Sloly had made a request for 1,800 officers. He  
25 also -- we haven't looked at the email, but there is an email in  
26 which he sets out a chart indicating what kind of personnel he's  
27 looking for and how many?

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And this is a letter,  
2 then, dated February 7th, to Premier Ford and Solicitor General  
3 Sylvia Jones. And this is a letter in which you request...

4                   If we go down. There we go.

5                   And there, you are asking for those officers.

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's a little further down.

7                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Oh, further down on the  
8 second page, yeah. Yes.

9                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And I believe we did send the  
10 chart to these individuals as well that the Chief had indicated  
11 ---

12                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

13                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- or put together.

14                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And we know that  
15 Chief Sloly had asked that you advocate for the resources at  
16 different levels of government.

17                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

18                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Did he ask you  
19 specifically to write this letter?

20                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, that was the  
21 implication. He provided us with his request, because  
22 Councillor Deans and I both agreed that we needed to get  
23 something in writing because it was putting us in an awkward  
24 situation where we were having these regular meetings with  
25 federal and provincial officials, and they said, "Well, how many  
26 resources do you need?", and we didn't have an answer.

27                   So to the credit of the Chief, he put together a  
28 very thorough -- it wasn't just police officers, there were

1 obviously other components that he had asked for, including  
2 civilian staff and public order officers, cyber investigative  
3 capacity individuals and social media forensics and financial  
4 forensics. So we wanted to put that in writing, and this letter  
5 was basically the same as the one we sent to the Federal  
6 Government as well.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And if we can go  
8 up. There we go.

9 On the second paragraph there you say:

10 "What was initially described as a  
11 peaceful protest has now turned into a  
12 siege of our downtown area."

13 And then you say:

14 "As of today, there are currently  
15 between 400 and 500 trucks occupying  
16 Ottawa's downtown core."

17 Then you go on to say:

18 "These acts and the occupation are  
19 having damaging and long-term impacts  
20 on the well-being of our residents.  
21 People are living in fear and are  
22 terrified - and they've now been  
23 subjected to the non-stop honking of  
24 large trucks for nine days, which is  
25 tantamount to psychological warfare."

26 Then you say:

27 "Given the scope and scale of the  
28 armada of large trucks that are now

1 occupying our downtown core..."

2 And this is now on the second page:

3 "...we are writing to you to ask today  
4 for your help to secure 1800 officers  
5 to quell the insurrection that the  
6 Ottawa Police Service is not able to  
7 contain."

8 And then further down, you say:

9 "We must do everything in our power to  
10 take back the streets of Ottawa, and  
11 our parliamentary precinct, from the  
12 criminal activity and hooliganism that  
13 has transpired over the last nine days.  
14 We need your help to end this siege at  
15 the heart of our nation's capital and  
16 in our residential neighbourhoods and  
17 to regain control of our city."

18 So was that description of the situation accurate  
19 as to what was happening on the ground as of February 7th?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Absolutely. You know, I think  
21 if you just go back and look at the media coverage, and the  
22 media themselves were being harassed during this whole period of  
23 time, we now know that a number of children had to miss chemo  
24 and radiation appointments at CHEO. The residents living on  
25 those streets, having these horns honk literally 24 hours a day,  
26 7 days a week, plus the diesel fumes, plus they're roasting a  
27 pig on one street, bonfires, lighting off fireworks, having a  
28 dance party, it was showing complete disrespect for the people

1 who lived in the City of Ottawa.

2                   And I put that wording in very strongly to let  
3 the two other orders of government know that we needed their  
4 help. Our city's back was against the wall, we had this  
5 outrageous behaviour by people who seemed to have no respect for  
6 private property, public property, or the well-being of the  
7 citizens of Ottawa. And my job as Mayor was to speak out and  
8 say, "We have to end this, and the only way we're going to end  
9 it is with a significant increase and boost in the number of  
10 police officers."

11                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And when you say, "and to  
12 regain control of our city", you're conveying here that you,  
13 you, the greater you, I suppose, you, OPS, the City, OPS had  
14 lost control of the city?

15                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, it was teetering on loss  
16 of control. We lost control in the red zone because we couldn't  
17 even contain jerry cans going in. You know, in one or two  
18 incidents the Chief explained to me the police tried to stop  
19 them and then they were swarmed by a hundred truckers.

20                   And one of the things I think is vitally  
21 important to remember in this whole terrible situation was that  
22 while there was a high level of frustration on the part of the  
23 public, rightfully so, on the part of our Council and City Staff  
24 and myself, at the end of the day there were no deaths and there  
25 were no serious injuries.

26                   And so the Chief, in his wisdom, and I agree with  
27 him, was not going to barge in there without necessary resources  
28 to make sure that the one shot they had, the one opportunity

1 they had to actually get in there and clean up Wellington Street  
2 and Kent and O'Connor and the Byward Market and the baseball  
3 stadium was to do it with the necessary resources to move in  
4 quick, swiftly, and that's exactly what they did, and I  
5 appreciate the police doing that.

6 But you're quite right, on the red zone it was  
7 lawlessness. People were having parties, there were open fires,  
8 and they were firing off fireworks that were a fire hazard to  
9 heritage buildings in the downtown core. They were harassing  
10 people in restaurants, tearing off their masks. These are not  
11 sort of made-up stories, these are all documented during the  
12 convoy occupation.

13 And so yes, we -- we're not swallowing our pride  
14 by saying we -- you know, we could do it on our own. We needed  
15 help, and we needed the help of the other two orders of  
16 government.

17 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So if I can take you now  
18 to OTT6057. And this is another letter, dated February 7th, and  
19 this is now directed to the Prime Minister and to  
20 Minister Mendicino; is that right?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And it's essentially the  
23 same letter.

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

25 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

26 And -- now I understand that discussions with the  
27 Prime Minister and with Minister Mendicino were ongoing. The 7<sup>th</sup>  
28 is the same day as there was a first tripartite Ministerial

1 meeting, on the 8<sup>th</sup> there was as well, and on the 10<sup>th</sup>.

2 So did you receive a formal response to this  
3 letter from the Prime Minister or Minister Mendicino?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'd have to go back and look  
5 in files. Often these letters go out, they're publicly made and  
6 you necessarily get a response.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah.

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** What we were looking for is  
9 not a nice type written response. We wanted action. And we  
10 believe that -- I certainly believe that this letter acted to  
11 break the log jam to put in writing, for the first time, our  
12 specific requests that we needed help.

13 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Now, the Solicitor  
14 General did respond to your letter on February 8 -- sorry, on  
15 February 10? Is that right?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I recall her sending, I think,  
17 a two-page letter to I believe it was both Councillor Deans and  
18 myself.

19 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. If I could take  
20 you to ONT851? And this is the response dated February 10. We  
21 can see there it's from the Solicitor General of Ontario. And  
22 it's to you and to Chair Deans as well:

23 "Thank you for your letter, also addressed  
24 to the Honourable Doug Ford, Premier of  
25 Ontario, requesting additional officers..."

26 And then she says:

27 "Public safety is a top priority for this  
28 government. The Ministry of the Solicitor



1 General is committed to working with our  
2 policing and community partners to provide  
3 them with the resources and tools they  
4 need to keep Ontario's communities safe  
5 and resilient."

6 Then she talks about:

7 "The right to peacefully protest is core  
8 to our Canadian identity - peaceful  
9 protests are a cornerstone of a healthy  
10 democracy. However, criminal behaviour is  
11 never tolerated, and hatred or intolerance  
12 must be condemned by all."

13 And she says, the last paragraph at the bottom:

14 "We have been encouraging all those  
15 participating in the Ottawa protests to  
16 govern their actions in a way to ensure  
17 they are peaceful and respectful to the  
18 community and to those charged with  
19 keeping the peace."

20 And then she says:

21 "Regarding [...] request for significant  
22 additional [...] resources, please note that  
23 I have shared your correspondence with  
24 [OPP] Commissioner Thomas Carrique.  
25 Commissioner Thomas Carrique and [RCMP]  
26 Commissioner Brenda Lucki will continue to  
27 liaise with Chief Peter Sloly, Ottawa  
28 Police Service, to determine how policing

1                   partners can provide support based on  
2                   available policing resources and the  
3                   operational plan proposed by the Ottawa  
4                   Police Service."

5                   So what was -- what's your reaction to this  
6 letter? Did this satisfy what you were looking for in the  
7 letter that you sent on February 7<sup>th</sup>?

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. But I think, you know, as  
9 a former Minister myself, in the Provincial Government, this is  
10 the kind of letter that, you know, is pretty much a template.  
11 You thank them, you explain the situation, and you are told  
12 that, rightfully so, the Minister can't direct the OPP on what  
13 to do, but she forwarded it to the Commissioner of the OPP.

14                   So you know, we knew at some point we would get  
15 through to the Province and they would come and help us. And  
16 when they did, it was very much appreciated, and the OPP did a  
17 remarkable job.

18                   But, you know, there's -- the level of  
19 frustration that we had was that it's fine to forward this to  
20 the Commissioner of the OPP, but by that time, the Commissioner  
21 would have known what our request is, because Chief Sloly was in  
22 pretty regular contact with both Commissioners.

23                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So did the Solicitor  
24 General commit to do anything, either in this letter or in any  
25 discussions that you had with her? Any kind of specific action  
26 that the Solicitor General was committing to take?

27                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, again, when I had a call  
28 with her, I can't recall the date, but the Premier and the

1 Solicitor General were both on the call, and they indicated that  
2 they would not be participating in the tripartite group, which  
3 was disappointing, but it's their call. But I reiterated with  
4 the Premier on I believe the two calls that I had, that it was  
5 essential that we get police officers here as quickly as  
6 possible.

7                   And the whole issue, as I talked about earlier,  
8 the Solicitor General was under the impression that there were  
9 1,500 officers assigned to Ottawa, which was not the case.

10                   I think what may have happened was that the  
11 Minister or the OPP were, you know, giving a cumulative number,  
12 you know, 50 here, and then maybe 40 came back, and then another  
13 60 arrived, so you count 50 plus 60.

14                   And the other thing is, I think you have to keep  
15 in mind, in this period, was the Windsor situation, which was  
16 viewed as a higher priority, given the billion dollar a day  
17 trade blockade that was taking place in Windsor.

18                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** M'hm.

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And so we certainly saw  
20 through the news a significant OPP presence in the Windsor area.

21                   And I -- you know, I thought at the time, well,  
22 you know, I wish they were here, because we think we're just as  
23 important as Windsor, but I thought, well, at the very least,  
24 they did a very good job in Windsor, and once that's wrapped up,  
25 they'll be sending those officers to Ottawa.

26                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So you expected  
27 that the Windsor issue, and by that, we mean the blockade at the  
28 Ambassador Bridge, would be resolved before Ottawa became a

1 priority to become resolved? Is that right?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. And that's in fact what  
3 happened.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And if I can take  
5 you to ONT858? Now, this was a letter that was not sent to you.  
6 It's the next day after the response from the Solicitor General,  
7 the kind of template letter, as you described it. And this is  
8 now February 11<sup>th</sup>. And this is directed to Commissioner  
9 Carrique, and the Solicitor General says:

10 "This letter is being sent regarding the  
11 protest activity occurring in Windsor..."

12 So this is the Windsor situation you were talking  
13 about.

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

15 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:**

16 "The Government of Ontario is proposing  
17 that a meeting occur within an agreeable  
18 time period, between a select group of  
19 protest leadership and representatives of  
20 the province to allow their issues to be  
21 heard.

22 To move forward with our offer to schedule  
23 a meeting, all protesters must leave the  
24 protest site immediately, denounce all  
25 unlawful activity and encourage a period  
26 of quiet. This means no unlawful,  
27 unpeaceful, unsafe protest activity can  
28 occur between the time of acceptance of

1                   this offer until the meeting takes place.  
2                   Please share this with the protest  
3                   leadership and note that immediate  
4                   agreement is required. Any time delay in  
5                   acceptance will negate this offer."

6                   So in this letter, the Solicitor General is  
7                   offering that the Province will meet with a group of protestors  
8                   in Windsor if they leave the protest site immediately and  
9                   denounce all activity.

10                   Are you aware if the Province ever offered to  
11                   meet with protestors in Ottawa?

12                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'm not aware of any such  
13                   request.

14                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And is it fair to say  
15                   that that option was never discussed either with the Premier or  
16                   with Solicitor Jones at any of your discussions?

17                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

18                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And actually, in fairness, I  
20                   have not seen this letter. I don't believe it was CC'd to me.  
21                   So it's ---

22                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** No, ---

23                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- the first I've seen it.

24                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- that's right. It was  
25                   not a letter that was sent to you, but the question was whether  
26                   this type of offer that was being made with respect to the  
27                   protestors in Windsor, if that ever came to your attention, if  
28                   that ever happened with respect to the protestors in Ottawa.

1 And what I hear you saying is that, no, that never ---

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, that was never an option  
3 that was presented to me or anyone in my office.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. If I can take you  
5 now to -- I'm going to take you to the first tripartite meeting  
6 that occurred on February 7<sup>th</sup>.

7 And it is PB.NSC.CAN2335. And if we go down to  
8 the bottom of that page? Yeah, right there. Okay.

9 So this is -- my understanding is that this is a  
10 read out of the first of the three tripartite Ministerial  
11 meetings that took place with you, Minister Blair, Minister  
12 Mendicino, I think -- I believe Mr. Kanellakos attended as well,  
13 and at times, Deputy Minister Rob Stewart was in attendance as  
14 well?

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, it was all done  
16 virtually.

17 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yes. And BB there is  
18 Bill Blair, and in the second line, he says:

19 "Spoke to PM last night - felt it was  
20 important to convene table, all of them  
21 have already been working well with city  
22 officials."

23 And so it looks like there, the Prime Minister  
24 felt that it was important to convene this tripartite table with  
25 everybody at the table so that issues could be discussed.

26 And if we look at -- MM is Minister Mendicino,  
27 and in the third line, he says:

28 "We have confirmed 250 Mounties have been

1                   deputized."

2                   He says:

3                   "We have been timely and responsive in  
4                   putting our response together  
5                   Minister Jones will want to have a  
6                   discussion with what they can contribute..."

7                   So I understand that he's saying here that they  
8                   have made 250 RCMP officers available? Is that your reading of  
9                   that too?

10                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

11                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And if we go to  
12                  the next page, you say -- in the first line, you say "150  
13                  already preassigned." And are you talking about RCMP officers  
14                  here?

15                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

16                  **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** You say,  
17                                 "Not on Wellington Street or Kent  
18                                 Counted as part of the total, but this  
19                                 doesn't help our foot soldiers with OPS  
20                                 Down to 100 spread over three shifts  
21                                 over eight hours, [this] isn't a lot  
22                                 Our request is significant -- biggest  
23                                 crisis facing our city, we are filled  
24                                 with angst."

25                  So what are you trying to convey in this section  
26                  here?

27                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I have to say, Minister  
28                  Mendocino was very reproachable and reasonable to deal with in

1 the many opportunities I had to deal with him. He understood  
2 the file. But we had a disagreement in terms of what the --  
3 I'll call it 250, I guess, officers, you know, on the ground as  
4 the federal government was saying. They were on the ground in  
5 Ottawa, but they were assigned 50 to West Block, which was the  
6 new centre block, 50 to Rideau Cottage and 50 to Rideau Hall.  
7 So out of the 250 or 257, you remove 150 right away because  
8 those individuals stationed at West Block, Rideau College [sic]  
9 and Rideau Hall were not helping Centretown or the residential  
10 area of Centretown or the ByWard Market or Overbrook-Forbes.

11                   So, you know, it was a bit frustrating because,  
12 you know, when I read through this, once you get down to 100  
13 spread over 3 shifts of 8 hours a day, it's not a lot of  
14 officers. And so while we appreciated every time we saw a  
15 Mountie or we saw an OPP officer, we needed the large number of  
16 1800 to get the situation under control and kick these yahoos  
17 out of our city who were disrupting the quality of life of the  
18 people of Ottawa.

19                   So, you know, at the end of the day, fast  
20 forward, we got what we wanted, and we appreciate the federal  
21 government and the provincial government's support. We wanted  
22 it sooner because this thing should not have lasted three weeks.

23                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then further down in  
24 the middle of the page it says, "Watson," that's you, "on  
25 tripartite table -- has the province agreed to this?" And Bill  
26 Blair says,

27                                   "Both of us have reached out ([Marco  
28                                   Mendocino] and I) we are working on it.



1 She wasn't able to join today  
2 unfortunately."

3 And "she" would be the Solicitor General?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

5 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

6 "Will continue to engage to encourage  
7 them to join these talks."

8 And then you say,

9 "Province is very reluctant to be a  
10 part of what is going on  
11 Premier -- line was "anything you need,  
12 I will be there for you". I have gone  
13 to Sylvia Jones with that message  
14 The protesters are digging in, tried to  
15 light a fire for example  
16 They are misleading people on social  
17 media"

18 So what is the sentiment that you're conveying  
19 there?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, disappointment that the  
21 province didn't want to take part in the tripartite. And when I  
22 had that conversation with Minister Jones and the Premier on  
23 that phone -- I think it was a phone call or Zoom. I can't  
24 recall, to be honest. The Premier was adamant that he did not  
25 feel it would be useful to have three levels of politicians  
26 sitting around a table.

27 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And did he say why he  
28 didn't think that was going to be -- that wasn't necessary or

1 helpful?

2                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you know, I think he  
3 felt it would be a waste of time. You know, I -- you know, when  
4 he said that, I was quite frustrated with him. He said, "Look  
5 at, what's it going to accomplish? A bunch of people sitting  
6 around a table talking and making decisions." And I said,  
7 "Well, that sounds like a cabinet meeting." And he didn't like  
8 that, but the end of the day, it was his call. If he wasn't  
9 going to go to -- force his Minister to go to the meeting or not  
10 go to the meeting, he just said they're not going to be part of  
11 it.

12                   So as I said, now in fairness to the Premier,  
13 when he did engage, it worked. We had the police officers and  
14 the OPP, we had the RCMP, and we were all on the same book, but  
15 this thing should have been resolved in week one, not week  
16 three.

17                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And when did you see  
18 engagement from the province? When did you start seeing that?

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'd have to look through my  
20 notes, but it was, you know, I think probably sometime by the  
21 end of the second week of the protest, sometime in that period.

22                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So we know that the  
23 province declared a state of emergency on February 11<sup>th</sup>. Would  
24 you say that they were engaged before that time or that's the  
25 point of time when they became engaged?

26                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you know,  
27 notwithstanding the fact they didn't want to participate in the  
28 tripartite, they were obviously available to us. And, you know,

1 as I mentioned, you know, at the local level, federally, I had  
2 very good liaison and connection with Minister Yasir Naqvi, the  
3 MP for Ottawa Centre; Mona Fortier, the President of Treasury  
4 Board -- I think she was in a different portfolio at that point;  
5 and Minister McLeod. So we were having ongoing discussions at  
6 the political level, and all three of those and other elected  
7 officials were acting as a very good conduit for our requests  
8 back to their political establishments.

9           And I can't give you an exact time when the  
10 province was more engaged, but they were always engaged. They  
11 just weren't at the tripartite table. And I think certainly  
12 after Windsor, they recognized the next big problem is Ottawa  
13 and they better, you know, get there as soon as possible because  
14 this thing was close to swirling out of control. And what we  
15 were seeing was every weekend, people were treating this like it  
16 was some sort of a rave, or a party, or something, and arriving.  
17 And there were DJs, and loud sound systems, and racist flags,  
18 and desecration of our National War Monument, and I think -- you  
19 know, I can't give you the exact date, but eventually, the OPP  
20 came on board. Eventually, we got the RCMP. But as I said,  
21 this thing frustrated me because, you know, the public were  
22 saying, "Well, why don't you tell the police to do this?" And  
23 as we all know, or most people know, in our society, a  
24 politician cannot by law direct a police service on operational  
25 matters. So we have to work at the political level to do  
26 whatever we can to get some resolution to a situation that was  
27 extremely hurtful to thousands of people.

28           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So if I can take you now

1 to another document SSM.NSC.CAN.2052? And I believe this is a  
2 readout of the second tripartite meeting, and it looks like the  
3 participants on the first page are Minister Mendocino, Minister  
4 Blair, you -- if we go down a little bit, yeah -- and it looks  
5 like Chief Sloy was in attendance. Do you recall him attending  
6 one of the tripartite meetings?

7 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So then on the  
9 first page, you say, "Why no SOLGEN [in] attendance?" I suppose  
10 that's Minister Jones, Solicitor General ---

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Okay. I see that, yeah.

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah, and then Minister  
13 Mendocino says, "No word back." So at this point, you had  
14 expected that Ontario would have been at this table; is that  
15 right?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, I -- you know, I don't  
17 know the sequence of dates as to whether -- you know, because I  
18 did have that conversation with the Premier where he rejected  
19 the idea, but, you know, I know that the federal Ministers were  
20 also trying to get the Solicitor General to engage on the  
21 tripartite table, which she declined.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Well, this may assist  
23 because then you say, "I am speaking to Premier tomorrow." So  
24 you probably spoke to him then on February 9<sup>th</sup>.

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I had at least two calls  
26 with the Premier, so you're probably correct in the sequence of  
27 events.

28 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And then you say,

1 "Will ask that his Minister be at the table."

2                   And if we go to where it says Blair,  
3                               "on Ontario involvement. I know  
4                               Marco's been having good conversations  
5                               with [Ontario]. They are worried about  
6                               being visible and then being asked  
7                               about what the province is doing."

8                   Do you know -- what was the discussion around  
9 that point, they are worried about being visible? Can you  
10 expand on what the discussion was there?

11                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I really don't recollect what  
12 the reference to visible or invisible was.

13                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So do you know  
14 what Ontario's concern is? It says they are concerned about  
15 being visible and being asked about what the province is doing.  
16 You can't shed any light?

17                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I can only speculate.

18                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** So I don't really know what --  
20 -

21                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Sure.

22                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- was going through their  
23 mind at that point. They certainly knew that they were more  
24 than welcome to the table. And they had had our letter from  
25 Councillor Deans and I with the specific request and the  
26 breakdown ---

27                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

28                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- the officers needed.

1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then the Chief gives  
2 a breakdown of what's been going on, the breakdown of the  
3 resources, what they've been doing. And then on page 3, so it  
4 says on page 3, at the very top,

5                                   "Public safety risk is higher on  
6                                   RIDEAU. It's being contained by a..."

7                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Where is this?

8                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** On the very top of page  
9 3.

10                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Okay. Right.

11                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah.

12                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you.

13                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** It says,  
14                                   "Public safety risk is higher on  
15                                   RIDEAU. It's being contained by [...]  
16                                   QC criminal organization and they are  
17                                   radicalized elements as well. There is  
18                                   some negotiations ongoing leading to  
19                                   movement and that's 48 hours away. If  
20                                   we had resources tonight we [can] move  
21                                   on that tonight."

22                   And Minister Mendocino says, "confirm Rideau is  
23 ahead of Wellington?" So my understanding that this is in terms  
24 of clearing areas, that Rideau and Sussex would be ahead of  
25 Wellington in terms of an area to clear, because of the criminal  
26 activity that's being described here. Is that your  
27 understanding as well?

28                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. And my understanding,

1 because I was briefed on this, was that the Chief indicated  
2 there were -- criminal elements I believe were involved with the  
3 biker gang community in Quebec, and they were blockading the  
4 corner of where Rideau, Wellington, Sussex, and Colonel By  
5 connected. It was also -- had shut down, as you know, the  
6 Rideau Centre which was a major economic generator, as well as a  
7 lot of small restaurants and shops along Rideau Street and the  
8 ByWard Market.

9 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And then Sloly  
10 says:

11 "Yes, it's blocking a hospital route,  
12 etc, high risk to public safety. When  
13 we have resource reliability we will be  
14 able to move."

15 So here he is indicating that that area is  
16 blocking hospital route and therefore a priority for clearing it  
17 out. Is that your understanding as well?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, and also it's a major  
19 transit hub for both STO and OC Transpo as well.

20 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And a lot of small businesses  
22 in that area.

23 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then further down,  
24 Sloly says:

25 "For every action we do, there is a  
26 counter reaction that can exceed our  
27 resources. We saw that in Coventry.  
28 Our public request for more [than] 1800

1 more people resulted in the activity in  
2 Windsor, plus a national call for  
3 protesters to drive to Ottawa so they  
4 can outnumber even increased police  
5 presence."

6 So do you recall what Sloly was saying here about  
7 the public request for 1,800 officers, did he see that as a  
8 concern that that request was publicly made?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, what I think we were  
10 trying to do was to keep that number confidential because we  
11 didn't want to show our hand, or the police's hand as to how  
12 many resources were coming in. But I don't know when the 1,800  
13 came out, it may have come out of the Police Services Board or a  
14 question from a Member of Council, you know, you couldn't keep  
15 it suppressed forever. But you know, I certainly was not  
16 concerned with protesters coming all the way from Windsor.

17 What my preoccupation was to get the police  
18 officers that had quelled the situation in Windsor to get to  
19 Ottawa as quickly as possible. I think his point is it was a  
20 bit of a game of whack a mole. When they'd sort of resolve one  
21 situation another thing would flare up. A good example of that  
22 was the shack that was being built near the canal and the NAC in  
23 Confederation Park, this permanent structure where it was a food  
24 distribution point, and it was very, very, unsafe. There was  
25 propane, open fires, gasoline, all stored in this area, and our  
26 Fire Chief and fire service said this is a tinderbox that could  
27 explode.

28 So you know, we had to request from the NCC,



1 because it was their property, to move in. They eventually did  
2 move in and tore all of that down, but then people started to  
3 come back again. So it was one of these great frustrations that  
4 people had where you've got one thing resolved and then you  
5 moved on, you just didn't have the resources to keep enough  
6 police services there to ensure that a flare wouldn't happen  
7 again. So it all boiled down to, we needed more boots on the  
8 ground.

9 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so then Bill Blair  
10 says, "have you looked at traffic laws etc?" So he seems to be  
11 suggesting to use existing laws to deal with this.

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you know, the police  
13 have the responsibility for the *Highway Traffic Act*, you're  
14 correct. And you know, police can issue tickets for bylaws,  
15 parking and so on, but we had you know, I think the figures are  
16 in the documentation, there were thousands of tickets that were  
17 issued, hundreds of people that were charged and arrested. But  
18 we couldn't, for instance, send unarmed bylaw officers into a  
19 very volatile situation to hand out parking tickets. If police  
20 were being swarmed, you know, certainly you can expect even  
21 worse treatment of individuals who are not given the proper  
22 training to deal with a confrontation of that nature.

23 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I would not want to send a  
25 friend or foe into that red zone, or into the area where the  
26 Quebec biker group was.

27 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And at the bottom -- oh,  
28 sorry. Yes.

1           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** You know, I just would -- you  
2 know, I wouldn't in good conscience what to force bylaw officers  
3 who are not geared to dealing with angry unruly mobs, into a  
4 situation where their safety could be in danger.

5           **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And Chief Sloly  
6 alludes to this at the bottom. He says:

7                                 "it's a challenging situation to  
8 enforce. Just yesterday 100 people  
9 surrounded 30 officers when they  
10 apprehended an individual with a gas  
11 can and we're almost overcome. We need  
12 extra public order. Bylaw[s] aren't my  
13 control."

14                                 So he's essentially saying existing by laws,  
15 existing resources is not helpful to end the situation?

16           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

17           **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And then you say:  
18                                 " 'show me the mounties'. We need to  
19 come out of the meeting with the down  
20 payment on resources...What will you  
21 commit to?"

22                                 And then Minister Mendicino says:

23                                 "there is a 5pm RCMP call with the city  
24 I believe. We need to have the  
25 province present on these calls. OPP  
26 will play [a] critical role."

27                                 And then you say:

28                                 "it's hard for me to blast the province

1                   when I don't have a commitment from the  
2                   feds."

3                   So explain that comment there.

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you know, there was a  
5 level -- we were a bit like the meat in the sandwich. We were  
6 trying to get both orders of government to provide their  
7 national and provincial police services to the City of Ottawa,  
8 and the numbers that the Chief and his command team required to  
9 get this issue resolved. And we knew, you know, if you go back  
10 and look at the sequence of events from week one, to week two,  
11 to week three, we started to see a lot more action on week two  
12 than we did in week one.

13                   And what was important I think from my  
14 perspective was, you know, we all had a skin in the game in the  
15 sense that we had a police force, the OPP is a provincial police  
16 force, and the Mounties are the federal police force. And we  
17 need it all to be working and following the same script, because  
18 the last thing we needed was a bunch of distractions where you  
19 know, they don't agree, and they are fighting and squabbling.

20                   You know, at the end of the whole process when  
21 the police finally did move in and they have the 1,800, I  
22 believe it went up to 1,900, it was in my opinion -- and I'm not  
23 a policing expert -- but a very good case study on how to  
24 resolve a situation relatively quickly. They moved in, I  
25 believe on the Friday, they had the notices attached to all the  
26 vehicles on Thursday, and most of the work was done on Saturday,  
27 and then the last of it cleaned up on Sunday. And so, my point  
28 was I can't go and start criticizing the province if you still

1 haven't given me a commitment for the number of officers we  
2 needed from the RCMP.

3           Now, to get back to my point on sequence, I  
4 understand, you know, I think a lot of public would say, well,  
5 why weren't there more police here more quickly? We had police  
6 from Vancouver, Calgary, you know, all over the country,  
7 municipal forces, the Mounties had to ship people in from all  
8 parts of the country, and that takes time, there's logistics to  
9 that. That's why I wish that had started two weeks ago, at the  
10 end of week one instead of at the end of week two.

11           But at the end of this process, there was a  
12 logistical challenge to get that number of officers, most of  
13 whom had to fly or drive to get to Ottawa. We had to put them  
14 up, this is an expensive undertaking, we had to make sure they  
15 had proper food, that had to be sworn in, those Mounties that  
16 were coming in, because they didn't have jurisdiction on  
17 municipal grounds as a Mountie, but the OPP did. So there were  
18 a lot of things that took time, so I wish I could have snapped  
19 my finger and said, let's have 1,800, get them in there and end  
20 this nonsense. But that was not the case because it took, you  
21 know, four, five, six days.

22           When they finally ramped up and they had the 18  
23 to 1,900 individuals it was a very good show of leadership, and  
24 a very good show of the professionalism of the police officers.  
25 And I repeat this, because I think this this gets lost, we'd be  
26 having a much different Commission and discussion if someone had  
27 been shot and killed or seriously injured. That did not happen,  
28 and that is good, I think, credit to the police officers on the

1 ground in miserable conditions. As you recall, it was freezing,  
2 February, ice all over the place, and you know, they cleaned it  
3 out, and I give great credit to our first responders and others  
4 who worked very hard, paramedics, fire service, by law, public  
5 works, OC Transpo. It was all hands on deck.

6 And I know the public wanted us to move faster,  
7 and I empathize with what they were going through, but at the  
8 end of the process I think we have to remember that there was  
9 not -- these things are tinderboxes, you see them in other  
10 jurisdictions where it flares up and you see the tragedy of, you  
11 know, unprofessionalism taking hold.

12 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But as you mentioned,  
13 the municipality is a creature of the provincial statute, and  
14 here you're saying you want a commitment from the federal  
15 government, but you haven't secured commitment from the  
16 provinces, and isn't that the proper sequence? As a  
17 municipality, to go to the provinces, and then the provinces can  
18 then subsequently, you know, push that request up to the federal  
19 government. Why was that sequence not being followed here?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, in fairness, I think  
21 it's six of one, half a dozen of the other in many respects.  
22 You know, whether we get the province to agree first or the  
23 federal government, we're a little different as a city, because  
24 we are the nation's capital. We have a large RCMP presence as  
25 result of headquarters being here, the VIP protection detail,  
26 protecting federal buildings and so on. So even though we're  
27 dependent on the province, we're equally dependent on the  
28 federal government as our largest employer and the group that

1 pays the most in payments in lieu of taxes. So the reality is  
2 they were -- I would consider them equal partners during this  
3 crisis. I wasn't going to go through the niceties and protocol  
4 and say, "Well, we'll just keep hammering the Province until  
5 they agree and then we'll go to the Feds." We were trying to do  
6 it at the same time on two different tracks to get them both to  
7 agree, which eventually they did, but it took some time.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** More time than I liked.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And did anybody  
11 within the federal government, either Minister Blair, Minister  
12 Mendicino, the Prime Minister indicate to you that by not going  
13 first to the provinces to secure that kind of commitment, that  
14 there was a delay in procuring those resources as a result of  
15 not following what you called, "The niceties"?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't believe that was the  
17 case. Certainly, the federal Ministers asked me to, you know,  
18 communicate with the Premier, and I had a pretty good rapport  
19 with the Premier and, you know, as many people know, he's very  
20 accessible on his phone and takes calls quite quickly. And he -  
21 - you know, he was, I think he was sincere when he said, "You  
22 know, anything you need." But we needed to translate that into  
23 actual action.

24 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And so, you know, I was asked  
26 by Mr. Mendicini [*sic*] to raise the issue of OPP officers, and  
27 that's when I said, "Well, I can't go and keep pointing a finger  
28 at the Province when you haven't delivered your end of the

1 bargain." They eventually did, and we're grateful for that  
2 because that ended the blockade.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. But you didn't  
4 understand from anybody in the federal government that you were  
5 following -- that they thought you were following the wrong  
6 process by going directly to them.

7 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, it was never once raised  
10 that, you know, "Well, don't talk to us, you're a creature of  
11 the Province."

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay, fair enough.

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That never happened.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** If I can take you to  
15 SSM.CAN.NSC2837? And this is a readout of the call with the  
16 Prime Minister on February 8.

17 And so you recall you had a discussion with the  
18 Prime Minister on this day?

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. I'm just looking for my  
20 notes.

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah.

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** It's February 8<sup>th</sup>?

23 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** If we can zoom into that?  
24 Yeah, February 8.

25 Yeah, thank you.

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Just trying to ---

27 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And we'll go down to the  
28 -- kind of the meat of it. Yes, a little bit down more. There

1 we go.

2                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry; I'm not seeing it on  
3 the 8<sup>th</sup> on my chronology. But if you have it, I'll believe you.

4                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yes, it should be on the  
5 screen there, February 8, ---

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah.

7                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- a call -- a readout  
8 of the call with the Prime Minister. And if we go to the second  
9 page, yeah, you say -- well, the Prime Minister asks how you're  
10 doing. You say:

11                                   "A challenge for everyone. Still a  
12                                   pretty unstable situation. Nasty people  
13                                   out there that just don't represent  
14                                   Canada. Reminds me of the republican  
15                                   party down south. Can't reason with  
16                                   them, so vulgar, and hateful attacking  
17                                   people, ripping masks off, honking  
18                                   their horns. It's not over yet, and I  
19                                   appreciate..."

20                   **THE COMMISSIONER:** Just, you might slow down a  
21 bit for the interpreters. I'm just worried that ---

22                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Oh, okay, sorry. I'm  
23 just aware of the time, but, yes, you're right. Let's slow down  
24 for the interpreters.

25                                   "It's not over yet, and I appreciate  
26                                   that I had a really good conversation  
27                                   with Marco and Bill. We have a table  
28                                   with the PT this afternoon at 4:30,..."



1 Do you know what the reference to the PT? Is  
2 that just the tripartite, or what's the PT; do you know?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'm assuming it's the  
4 Province. Usually you think of PT as provincial, territorial,  
5 but...

6 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

7 "...and hopefully more resources from  
8 you on RCMP..."

9 Then you say:

10 "Ford is just staying away from this,  
11 but I want to bring him into the tent."

12 So when you say, "Ford is staying away from  
13 'this'"; what is the "This"? Is it ---

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, it's the tripartite  
15 table that he didn't think was helpful.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

17 And then the Prime Minister says:

18 "Have they (province) indicated they  
19 will be there at 4:30?"

20 You say:

21 "It's been set up by Bill's office.  
22 Sylvia [*sic*] Jones is the name on it.  
23 She has been disingenuous saying there  
24 are 1400 opp, bul [*sic*] that's not  
25 true. I spoke to Ford yesterday, and  
26 he said anything you want, so I'm going  
27 to hold his words to it."

28 So this was the issue that you had raised about

1 the 1,400 OPP officers; correct?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. I think it was 1,500  
3 but close to 1,400, correct.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So either 14 or  
5 1,500.

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And on the Sylvia Jones, her  
7 name was on it, but she did not participate.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So she was on the invite,  
9 is that right?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And then you ask  
12 about resource, and the Prime Minister says:

13 "One of the challenges is that it goes  
14 In steps. The first step is to go to  
15 the OPP, then RCMP. It's difficult for  
16 us to say what we need to do directly  
17 until we have a better idea of what the  
18 province is doing. That's why this  
19 table is so important."

20 So can you explain what the Prime Minister told  
21 you here?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I think he was alluding  
23 to the fact that it would have been helpful to have the Province  
24 -- you know, it's like a three-leg stool; if you only have two  
25 legs on it, it's not that sturdy. You need all three; the  
26 provincial, municipal, and federal orders of government, number  
27 one. And I just think, you know, during a crisis, from a  
28 leadership point of view, the more information you have, the

1 better to share with your partners. We're not in opposition to  
2 one another, but we need all three to be singing from the same  
3 hymn book, as they say.

4                   So my interpretation of that on that call with  
5 the Prime Minister was that he felt that we needed to continue  
6 to put pressure on the OPP and the Province -- not the OPP, but  
7 the Province to get the OPP to come in good numbers, just as  
8 they did in Windsor. I think Windsor was wrapped up relatively  
9 quickly, and there was the situation in a small town in Alberta  
10 where there was a fairly large RCMP presence.

11                   We needed both of those police services on board  
12 in order to move in. The police from Ottawa cannot do it on  
13 their own, and having 50 OPP and another 50 or 100 RCMP was not  
14 going to cut it. We needed the 1,800 total.

15                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so when he says this:

16                                   "...goes in steps. The first step is  
17                                   to go to the OPP, then RCMP."

18                   Did you understand him to be saying that the  
19 proper order of operations was not being followed?

20                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I wouldn't interpret that.

21 I think normally, in the normal course of events, you know, for  
22 instance, the declaration of a state of emergency or requesting  
23 military, there is that process where you have the Municipality  
24 ask the provincial government, who ask the Minister of National  
25 Defence. We did that, for instance, during the flooding, I  
26 believe, in 2017, 2019 where the military were very helpful to  
27 come in and help.

28                   But from my perspective, this was completely

1 different. We weren't -- this is not a regular, you know,  
2 situation; this is a very unique situation. And, again, I  
3 challenge anyone to come up with any time in our recent history  
4 in the last two generations where this kind of a -- you know, an  
5 occupation took place for a prolonged period of time.

6 So, you know, I think he was referencing probably  
7 the normal course of events is that we would normally go through  
8 the OPP and up the chain of command. But we had requested,  
9 based on the letters Councillor Deans and I sent to both orders  
10 of government, and it was very clear that we needed both of them  
11 to respond as quickly as possible with action and not words.

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So Minister Mendicino and  
13 Deputy Minister Stewart, as we saw yesterday, was very -- they  
14 were both very active in reaching out and offering their  
15 assistance and asking what the City needed. On the provincial  
16 side, was Di Tommaso or Laurie LeBlanc or Sylvia Jones, were  
17 they also reaching out proactively to see how they could help?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, we knew what help we  
19 wanted, and they knew what help we needed because we sent the  
20 letter. So they were fully aware of our request and specific  
21 demand.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So you weren't hearing  
23 them proactively like you were from the others?

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. Again, you know, I think  
25 you know, I only had, I believe, two or three calls with the  
26 Premier, and I think only one of those was with Minister Jones  
27 so I don't recall -- in fairness, I don't know why they would be  
28 asking us what we need when, in fact, we told them what we

1 needed in that letter to the Premier and to the Minister.

2 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And then the  
3 Prime Minister says:

4 "But on the Ottawa policing side, you  
5 have seen, as II [*sic*] have,..."

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry; where is that? Which  
7 paragraph?

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So we're now further --  
9 the last paragraph at the bottom. There; now it's in the  
10 middle. It's the Prime Minister; it's in the middle of the  
11 page, "but on the policing side..." It's on the second  
12 paragraph of the Prime Minister's ---

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Okay, I see that.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** "But on the Ottawa  
15 policing side, you have seen, as II  
16 [*sic*] have, some concerns on how things  
17 were handled from the beginning, how is  
18 your relationship with the police chief  
19 and how are you guys working together?  
20 There are moments [when] you are saying  
21 one thing and he is saying another, is  
22 there anywhere we can help around  
23 that?"

24 Now, the Prime Minister here seems concerned that  
25 you and Chief Sloly were delivering different messages. Do you  
26 have a sense for what that concern was?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't. And I don't believe  
28 I asked for clarification. I had confidence, full confidence in

1 Chief Sloly. He was a relatively new Chief, as you know, to the  
2 City of Ottawa, but he had extensive experience as a deputy  
3 chief in Toronto, and in particular, with some large events, I  
4 think it was either the G7 or the G20 meetings that took place  
5 in Toronto.

6 So I can't recall where Chief Sloly and I were  
7 not on the same page. You know, most of the press conferences  
8 dealt with police matters, so he was the lead in it, and I would  
9 be scrummed, for instance, after a Council meeting of when we  
10 had a Zoom call of any nature.

11 But I don't recall any rift that we had. I think  
12 one of the things was, you know, I was probably very impatient  
13 at how slow the process was going to get the police officers and  
14 how slow it took to get the actual breakdown as to what the  
15 Chief needed. So I may have said, you know, in public, that I  
16 wanted to see this letter go off to the two orders of government  
17 much more quickly, and he may have had a different opinion  
18 because, you know, he sent it when he sent it.

19 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So the Prime Minister  
20 says he had some concerns with how things were handled from the  
21 beginning, and he said, "you have seen, as I have, some  
22 concerns." What were those concerns?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, the concerns were what  
24 happened to our intelligence system, both at the three orders of  
25 government, that we did not have a better sense that these  
26 individuals were going to come and stay a long period of time.  
27 Why were so many vehicles allowed to enter what I consider the  
28 most significant historic street in the history -- in the

1 country because it's the street that houses our Parliament  
2 buildings? And why the roads were not blocked off when we  
3 started to see an increase in the number of trucks coming down  
4 the street and parking on King Edward? And I think almost every  
5 Canadian has that same questions. Why were these allowed to  
6 happen?

7                   And it's easy to be, you know, talking about  
8 hindsight and looking in the rear-view mirror. I think this  
9 thing came about, and it just kept growing and growing, and we  
10 collectively, all three orders of government and the police, did  
11 not respond quick enough, and we allowed that major street, and  
12 led into the residential streets, to be taken over by a group of  
13 people that had no respect for the law and no respect for the  
14 people of our city.

15                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So when you say all three  
16 levels of government had erred in this way in letting them in,  
17 what could the City have done to prevent that situation?

18                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, again, I'm not an expert  
19 on policing matters, but the first thing should have been was  
20 to, you know, once we saw a number of vehicles arriving on  
21 Wellington Street, getting in there with a jersey barrier and  
22 shut off Wellington Street. That would have pushed them onto  
23 other roads.

24                   But my understanding, from the discussions that I  
25 saw taking place in the media, was that the prize pig was  
26 Wellington Street. They wanted to have Wellington Street, a  
27 flat bed truck and a podium and a sound system to denounce the  
28 Federal Government. So if they couldn't have that, going onto

1 Queen or Albert or Slater, not much of a backdrop on those  
2 streets. So this was very much, I think their intention was to  
3 go in and have them, with these vulgar flags and swastikas and  
4 confederate flags and so on, swirling all over the place, with  
5 the backdrop of Parliament Hill like they'd taken over the  
6 country.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And -- so -- but if we go  
8 back to that time, there were no discussions with Chief Sloly  
9 that you had with him about blocking access to the downtown  
10 area; right?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. Again, you know, that  
12 would've been handled at the staff level. You know, as you  
13 know, the staff, I think By-law and Public Works, would be  
14 responsible for blockading physically the street, but you would  
15 need a police presence there because you had to maintain a  
16 corridor, as they do now. If you go down to Wellington Street,  
17 there's still a corridor where an ambulance or a firetruck can  
18 get through.

19 But you're quite correct, you know, the challenge  
20 we all faced was that this thing came, we didn't think it was  
21 going to be as big as it did. And I've had conversations with  
22 other mayors who said, "you know what, we learned lessons from  
23 you." You know, Toronto, I think handled the situation, and the  
24 mayor told me, Mayor Tory, that, you know, we were the guinea  
25 pig of these protests and it allowed them to get their act  
26 together at the start of the issue because they saw what -- the  
27 pattern of activity, the truckers were doing here in Ottawa.  
28 And as a result, they were able to secure tow trucks quickly and



1 they were able to close off access points to Queens Park, and  
2 the same thing happened in Quebec City.

3 So you know, these mayors, you know, learned  
4 lessons from us, and if it had happened in another jurisdiction,  
5 I think we would've acted differently and quickly to secure  
6 Wellington Street as quickly as possible.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then you say in  
8 response to the Prime Minister's suggestion that maybe there is  
9 some concerns about how things are being handled in your  
10 relationship with the Chief, you say, "[O]ne thing was when he  
11 said...", and "he" is the Chief; right?

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

13 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:**

14 "...it's not a police solution, but it  
15 is a police solution, I think he is  
16 just a bit frustrated everything is  
17 coming down on him. But that doesn't  
18 make sense, this is a police matter. I  
19 have been trying my very best to back  
20 him up every day, as you know PM now is  
21 not the time to change courses, we have  
22 to do our best to support him."

23 And so when you say now is not the time to change  
24 courses, are you speaking about -- well, what are you speaking  
25 about?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, it's not the time to  
27 change the leadership of the police service, namely the Chief.  
28 But if you go back, I just wanted to -- you know, that was one

1 of the frustrations I did have with Chief Sloly when he said it  
2 was not a -- this is not going to be a police solution. And I  
3 think a lot of people were sort of scratching their head, and  
4 they said, "Well, if it's not a police solution, how are you  
5 going to solve it?"

6                   These individuals, you know, by and large you  
7 could not argue rationally or sensibly with. They were  
8 emotionally charged, angry people from all parts of the country.  
9 And I just thought that was a strange statement to make.

10                   But again, you know, as I said, I very much  
11 backed the Chief, and I thought, given the situation he found  
12 himself in, he was doing the very best he could to manage a lot  
13 of different groups, his officers, two other orders of  
14 government, the Police Services Board, City Council, residents.  
15 It was a very stressful time for everyone, I'm sure self  
16 included.

17                   But you know, I don't know at that point if there  
18 was some discussion about whether to remove the Chief or not, I  
19 certainly don't recall it. Later on, yes, because obviously he  
20 did in fact leave the police service, I can't recall how many, I  
21 think it was on the 15th.

22                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** He left on the 15th.

23                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** 15th; correct.

24                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So on that point, did you  
25 ever have any discussions with anybody, either within the  
26 provincial government or the federal government, about  
27 Chief Sloly's leadership and whether or not there should be a  
28 change in course?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, not with the -- to the  
2 best of my knowledge, not with the federal government, although  
3 I do recall some comments that Minister Blair made because he  
4 knew Chief Sloyly because Minister Blair used to be the Chief of  
5 the Toronto Police, but I can't recall the context or what was  
6 said about that.

7                   I know, for instance, during the call I had with  
8 Minister Jones and the Premier, they expressed some concern  
9 about the Chief's plan or lack of plan to get this issue  
10 resolved. And you know, again, I suspect Premier Ford knew  
11 Chief Sloyly from his days as a Toronto City Councillor, but it  
12 didn't go farther than I think there was -- Minister Jones made  
13 some reference to the fact that she was hearing that things were  
14 not operating at the Operations Centre as well as they should  
15 be, and there was some conflict and division.

16                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Now, at the bottom, the  
17 Prime Minister says:

18                                   "[L]isten, yes, you can say the federal  
19                                   government will be there with more  
20                                   resources, but again, the thing that  
21                                   frustrates me, and everyone is  
22                                   conflated..."

23                   And then there's some inaudible part. And then  
24 he says:

25                                   "[B]ut Doug Ford has been hiding from  
26                                   his responsibility on it for political  
27                                   reasons as you highlighted, and  
28                                   important that we don't let them get

1                                   away from that, and we intend to  
2                                   support you on that."

3                                   So what was your understanding of the political  
4 reasons of why Premier Ford, according to the Prime Minister,  
5 was hiding from his responsibility?

6                                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I can't speculate on  
7 what the Prime Minister said, but I think I shared his  
8 frustration that they wouldn't participate in the tripartite, we  
9 couldn't get a clear answer as to whether they were going to  
10 support the number of officers that we needed, and you know, the  
11 Premier did not come to Ottawa during the occupation. I think  
12 there was a sense by some in the community "Why is the Premier  
13 not here?", but in fairness, you know, sometimes when you bring  
14 a leader into a situation it causes more disruption because you  
15 need extra police and so on.

16                                   But you know, we had an open line of  
17 communication with the Premier, but I felt that -- I think he  
18 was probably more comfortable not getting into the mix of this  
19 until they were able to come up with the number of officers that  
20 he could announce were supporting our officers.

21                                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But the Prime Minister  
22 here is saying that you're saying that it's for political  
23 reasons.

24                                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I look at we're all  
25 politicians, the three of us, and my sense is that he didn't  
26 necessarily want to wear the situation because he felt that it  
27 was very much the responsibility of the Ottawa Police Service.  
28 And I fundamentally disagreed with them. I said of course

1 they're the lead police service, they have that legal  
2 jurisdiction, but we need the help of the other two orders of  
3 government with police officers.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And then you say:

5 "If they keep dragging their feet, I'm  
6 happy to call them out on it. It'd be  
7 nice if we have something firmed up with  
8 the federal government to shame them.  
9 Ford didn't even make an effort to come  
10 and see what's going on."

11 So it's clear you're sharing here the Prime  
12 Minister's frustration about the Province's lack of attendance  
13 at these meetings and general lack of involvement in the  
14 solution finding.

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, well I'm sharing my  
16 frustration because I was, you know, on the frontline trying to  
17 explain to the public why it was taking so long to get so many  
18 resources into Ottawa when Windsor went quite quickly, and  
19 obviously when the guns were discovered in that small community  
20 in Alberta, it was shut down pretty quickly. But ours was  
21 lingering on and there was -- you know, while we'd see -- you  
22 know, we'd have sort of a bit of an up and down where, you know,  
23 one day we'd get a count saying five or six of the rigs moved  
24 out, which was good, and then the next day we'd have, you know,  
25 seven or eight are coming back in.

26 So it was very, very fluid and very frustrating,  
27 and I think, you know, I was expressing my frustration, as was  
28 the Prime Minister, that on two fronts, one, we need the

1 pressure on the OPP -- or the Province to get the OPP here, but  
2 secondly, the Federal Government had to step up and do its duty,  
3 particularly being the Nation's capital. We needed the RCMP.

4           And, you know, as I said, I went through this  
5 period where you were spending an hour arguing that we don't  
6 have 250 officers, you've already assigned 150 to those three.  
7 And I'm not disputing, you wanted to protect the Prime Minister  
8 and the Governor General and Parliament, but don't keep  
9 repeating the fact that there's, you know, 250 officers out on  
10 the street in Ottawa, because that was not the case, and no one  
11 -- and I think, at the end of the process, you know, was there a  
12 little of, sort of, you know, if we push him on this front  
13 politically, he might act?

14           It worked, because we got the police officers we  
15 needed. You know, you don't necessarily want to go and  
16 constantly prod and attack and so on, but most of this was done  
17 behind the scenes so that we were not going to show, at least at  
18 the political level, there was this fractious debate. We could  
19 have a post mortem and deal with that after, but the immediate  
20 urgency was to give some piece of mind and comfort to those  
21 people who were living through hell in Centretown, and the  
22 Market, and Overbrook, Forbes.

23           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So would it have been  
24 helpful to have the Province in attendance at these meetings for  
25 everybody to be on the same page and for everybody to know what  
26 the numbers were and what was going on?

27           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Absolutely. I think that  
28 would have sped up the process because, you know, it's almost

1 like that game of telephone, by the time you get the translation  
2 of the last person, it's a lot different than the first person.  
3 I think everyone in the same room -- that was -- and I give  
4 credit to, I think it was Minister Blair that was the one that  
5 suggested the tripartite political group meet. And  
6 unfortunately we weren't able to convince the Province, but, you  
7 know, we can't force them to do what they don't want to do.

8 But, you know, the end result, albeit a week or  
9 two late, we did see unity on the frontlines with OPP, municipal  
10 police services, and Ottawa Police and RCMP. And as I said,  
11 they did what I consider a textbook case of cleaning up a  
12 really, really terrible situation.

13 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so if the Province  
14 had participated in these meetings and been more engaged, do you  
15 think there would have been less of a delay in receiving  
16 resources? That the process would have gone faster?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I can only speculate, because  
18 it's a theoretical question, but I truly believe it would have.  
19 If we're all at the same table speaking to one another, we can  
20 have our arguments back and forth, but, you know, in fairness,  
21 you know, at the other levels, there seemed to be some positive  
22 relationship, but there were obviously disputes with respect to  
23 what was the final plan that was going to be signed off on?

24 And then of course, as you know, Chief Sloly left  
25 the Service, so that created an element of instability. But it  
26 didn't last long, because just a few days later, the Police,  
27 with their plan, took hold and cleaned up the city.

28 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Thank you.

1           And Commissioner, this may be an appropriate time  
2 for a morning break, if you wish.

3           **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. So we'll take 15  
4 minutes. Be back at 25 to, or 24 to. And thank you.

5           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Thank you.

6           **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** We'll take the time and go  
7 off for a break.

8           **THE REGISTRAR:** The Commission is in recess for  
9 15 minutes. La Commission est levée pour 15 minutes.

10 --- Upon recessing at 11:21 a.m.

11 --- Upon resuming at 11:39 a.m.

12           **THE REGISTRAR:** Order. À l'ordre. The  
13 Commission has reconvened. La Commission a reprend.

14 --- MAYOR JIM WATSON, Resumed

15 --- EXAMINATION BY MS. NATATALIA RODRIGUEZ, (cont'd):

16           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So I'm going to take you  
17 now, Mayor Watson, to SSM.CAN.NSC2676, and this is the readout  
18 of the third and last tripartite ministerial meeting dating  
19 February 10, and it looks to be with Minister Blair, yourself,  
20 Minister Mendicino, Mr. Kanellakos, and Deputy Minister Stewart.

21           And on the first page, Minister Mendicino talks  
22 about discussions with Commissioner Lucki of the RCMP to provide  
23 an additional 275 RCMP officers, and then he says:

24                           "This will be operationalized in  
25                           conjunction with the OPP, need to have  
26                           a sense of the plan."

27           It's in the middle of that big paragraph. Do you  
28 see that? "This will be operationalized..." -- there it is ---



1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, I do.

2                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- "...in conjunction with  
3 the OPP, need to have a sense of the plan."

4                   And then on -- so my understanding, and we'll see  
5 a little bit later, is that this is in relation to Chief Sloly's  
6 plan to use the resources that will be made available. Is that  
7 your understanding as well?

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I believe so, yes.

9                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So if we go to the  
10 second page, just under the redacted portion -- keep going,  
11 yeah, there, "RS". So that is Deputy Minister Rob Stewart says:

12                                   "We are engaging the province on all  
13                                   these areas..."

14                   Which are the ones above that are blanked out:

15                                   "...as well as the evolution of the plan.  
16                                   From what I understand, the plan of the  
17                                   Chief has not yet been completely  
18                                   fleshed out. That my reflected the  
19                                   speed with which the RCMP can deploy  
20                                   resources."

21                   So what did you understand about the state of the  
22 plan from the OPS's perspective, the OPS plan, at this stage,  
23 which is now the 10<sup>th</sup> of February?

24                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, my understanding was  
25 that it was still being worked on and there was still debate  
26 amongst different agencies as to what was going to be the final  
27 plan. But in terms of the specifics, as I'm not a member of the  
28 Police Services Board, I would have no information or knowledge

1 about what was going on behind the scenes.

2 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right, but here in this  
3 meeting, they're not talking about specifics of a plan but  
4 they're talking about, "We need to have a plan in order to  
5 deploy the resources," so it was a discussion that the fact that  
6 the plan had not been completely fleshed out, that that would  
7 affect -- or that could delay the RCMP resources.

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Again, I can only speculate  
9 because I wasn't part of that decision-making but, obviously,  
10 the Chief felt comfortable days earlier giving us the number  
11 1800 of police officers that one would assume would work its way  
12 into the plan that he was working on. So I think, you know, the  
13 pressure we were putting on OPS was to give us a number so that  
14 we could go back to our partners at the federal and provincial  
15 levels of government to get the officers that would fit the plan  
16 ---

17 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- that was still being  
19 worked on.

20 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And so the  
21 federal -- your federal partners here are telling you that the  
22 plan is not completely fleshed out; right?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. And they would have  
24 received that, I suppose, from the RCMP that are at that command  
25 centre. As you know, you know, politicians are not part of a  
26 putting a plan together to deal with an operational matter.

27 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Sure.

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** So I'd have to rely on their

1 comments to get that information.

2 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And were hearing this  
3 from others as well, that there was issues with the Chief's --  
4 with the readiness of the plan?

5 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I -- at one point, I  
6 received a -- or had a conversation with Steve Kanellakos that  
7 indicated that there was some dispute and argument about what  
8 the final plan was going to look like but that was really the  
9 extent of it. My understanding was that these were not  
10 insurmountable issues and that they were close to signing off on  
11 the plan that would incorporate the 1800 officers to get this  
12 whole terrible situation resolved.

13 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right, and so your Chief  
14 of Staff yesterday testified that he was informed by Chief of  
15 Staff Mike Jones that by February 10 there was no agreement on  
16 an integrated plan and he indicated yesterday that you were  
17 aware of this as well and that it would have been communicated  
18 back to OPS, the fact that there were concerns about the  
19 readiness of the plan. Did you communicate that back to Ottawa  
20 Police Service or the Chief Sloly?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't know if I did or not,  
22 whether that would have come from Steve Kanellakos or Serge  
23 Arpin, but I don't recall me raising the issue with them. Any  
24 time I have any conversation about the plan, he would indicate  
25 to me that they're closing in on finalizing it, and while not  
26 giving me the specific date when they actually would start, it  
27 was alluded to on a number of occasions that they would start  
28 the process to clean out the whole area in days, not weeks.

1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Sure, but here, Minister  
2 Mendicino and Deputy Minister Stewart are indicating that not  
3 having a plan can affect the deployment of the RCMP officers.  
4 Did you convey that back to Chief Sloly to let him know that  
5 this was -- that the readiness of the plan was delaying?

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, again, that would have  
7 been done at the staff level, not at the political level, so  
8 Steve Kanellakos or Serge Arpin. But, you know, the reality is  
9 that we have to separate our roles. Even though I'm sitting in  
10 on this group, it's not making operational decisions. We were  
11 relying on the OPS to work with their partners to come up with a  
12 plan that was achievable and attainable in a relatively short  
13 period of time with the resources that we'd secured.

14                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And on page 4, if  
15 we go down -- okay, and then you say:

16                                   "Thank you. If we can word from the  
17 Commissioner to Sloly sometime today,  
18 we can get this moving. We don't have  
19 to pick it up and leave it on Monday."

20                                   (As read).

21                   Okay, sorry, I meant the second point at the  
22 bottom there where you say:

23                                   "This is a good step. At some point, I  
24 will call the Premier to get them to  
25 sit at this table."

26                   So this was the last tripartite meeting, correct?

27                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I believe so, yeah.

28                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so they -- in the

1 end, the Premier did not come to the table, right?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And do you know why the  
4 tripartite meeting stopped after February 10?

5 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I assume it was because  
6 we were closing in on that date when the police were going to  
7 start moving and it was no longer necessary. If we have secure  
8 the number of OPP officers in that period time or a couple of  
9 days later, there was not much point in meeting again.  
10 Although, I suspect if you looked at all of the different phone  
11 calls and Zooms and so on, we would have had meetings, bilateral  
12 or multilateral but not the full tripartite. That was the last  
13 one.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So in the three meetings  
15 that we looked at, there's some common themes that we can see.  
16 You're expressing frustration that you're not commitment from  
17 the Federal Government. You say you need boots on the ground,  
18 "Show me the Mounties. Let's get a downpayment on RCMP  
19 officers." So you felt that the Federal Government was not  
20 committing to the resources that you needed?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, at that time, but then  
22 we sent the letter; we had the two calls with the Prime  
23 Minister; had a number of calls with Minister Mendicino; and  
24 eventually, it all culminated in the officers arriving, both --  
25 I forgot to mention Municipal Services as well. They were quite  
26 substantial. You know, when you walked through the site and you  
27 saw Belleville police cars, and York Region, and Toronto, it was  
28 actually quite a relief to see those other police officers

1 helping their fellow police officers.

2                   So, you know, at the end of the day, the process  
3 unfolded as it should. But as I've said, one of the  
4 frustrations I had as a common theme was the lack of commitment  
5 to officers earlier on in the process.

6                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Sorry, did you say that  
7 the process unfolded as it should?

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, with the cleanup of the  
9 streets ---

10                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** I see.

11                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- where the police moved in  
12 and ---

13                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. But you agree that  
14 it took three weeks for that to happen, right?

15                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, and that was -- my  
16 biggest criticism was that it took so long to get this resolved.  
17 And again, you know, it's easy for me as an armchair critic to  
18 go and say, "Well, why didn't you move faster?" I understand  
19 there's some logistical -- you know, we had officers from  
20 Vancouver. Well, it takes time to get the plane tickets and get  
21 over here and get hotel accommodations and so on. So you know,  
22 I'm not being overly critical of the fact that there are some  
23 logistical challenges, but I was pushing from really, Day 1 or  
24 Day 2. We needed more help, because the chief told me we  
25 couldn't handle this on our own.

26                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. But you're not  
27 just an armchair critic. As you say, you're the mayor of Ottawa  
28 and you see that your city is in need, and so you have a duty,

1 really, to raise those issues and to push all levels of  
2 government to do whatever they can to get this resolved quickly,  
3 right?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. That was why I took on  
5 the role of ensuring that we had the political lines of  
6 communication open, why we established the tripartite committee,  
7 and why we sent the letter from my office and from Councillor  
8 Deans, and why we continued to have dialogue with local elected  
9 officials, members of council and our political counterparts at  
10 the federal and provincial government.

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But ultimately, there was  
12 a significant delay in getting those resources, although they  
13 ultimately did come ---

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

15 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- barely? But there  
16 was a significant delay in both RCMP officers and OPP officers;  
17 is that right?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And other municipal officers.

19 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And other municipal  
20 officers. And so essentially, what we're seeing in these three  
21 meetings is that you're not getting what you need from any level  
22 of government?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. You know, we -- I think  
24 the other level of frustration was that we pushed for some time  
25 to get a number. You know, I mentioned this earlier this  
26 morning, that we just couldn't go in -- continue going into  
27 meetings, whether bilateral or the tripartite meetings, without  
28 a clear idea from OPS as to what we needed. We finally did get

1 that, and that acted as a bit of a mechanism to unclog the  
2 decision making, but it just took too long.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So one issue then  
4 was not having an understanding of what was needed soon enough;  
5 is that right? Like, if that had been communicated sooner, the  
6 chain of events that subsequently happened could have started  
7 earlier, right?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, can you -- I don't  
9 quite understand the first part of your question.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** The first part is, you're  
11 saying that you eventually got the number of resources that were  
12 required, and you sent the letters off on February 7th, but had  
13 you understood what was required earlier, from January 31st, you  
14 already know that there are not enough resources, as we saw in  
15 your call with the prime minister. So had the chief  
16 communicated to you the requirements and a number sooner, that  
17 could have been passed on sooner, and the sequence of events of  
18 the meetings and trying to get those resources could have begun  
19 sooner, right?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** In theory, I hope that would  
21 have been the case, yes.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And if the RCMP  
23 officers had been secured, and if that commitment from the  
24 federal government had have been secured earlier, then also, the  
25 situation could have potentially been resolved sooner. There  
26 was a delay there in getting those federal resources, correct?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

28 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And if the province had



1 been at the table, at the tripartite table, and had been part of  
2 the discussions, and you were able to communicate directly to  
3 the solicitor general or to the premier what was needed and  
4 when, that also could have helped resolve the situation sooner,  
5 correct?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Thank you. So really, it  
8 was a failure at all levels. Would you agree with that?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, there's no question that  
10 you know, when you look at -- look back, you know, hindsight on  
11 what happened, there were many failure points along the way, and  
12 you know, whether it's the City or the provincial or the federal  
13 governments, we all have to take responsibility for the fact  
14 that we did not act fast enough and that the people of Ottawa  
15 suffered the most as a result of the fact that we did not clean  
16 up that occupation for three weeks. It should have been done  
17 sooner.

18 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so we've talked a  
19 little bit about what the OPS could have done differently, what  
20 the federal government and the provincial government could have  
21 done differently. What about the municipality? What could the  
22 City have done differently?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, as you know, we have  
24 limited authority and responsibility and powers in a situation  
25 like this. This was early on, literally within the first 24  
26 hours. This was clearly a police issue.

27 And I'm not simply shrugging our responsibility.  
28 We had certain responsibilities from bylaw and keeping the

1 streets opened and municipal requirements and policies and  
2 permitting process. This was just -- this overwhelmed the City  
3 of Ottawa. It overwhelmed us at the administrative,  
4 bureaucratic, operational, and political levels. We had never  
5 seen anything like this in our lives, and I think we were all,  
6 quite frankly, treading water, trying to keep our head afloat as  
7 we saw this situation unfold in front of us, both on television  
8 and in person.

9                   So it was, you know, a horrific experience for  
10 the people who lived there, who tried to work there, who tried  
11 to visit our city. It's had long-lasting impacts on many  
12 people's health. It's hurt our tourism industry, for instance.  
13 And you know, we have to rebuild that trust with the public and  
14 with the police, and we have to, on a go-forward basis, learn  
15 lessons and hopefully the Commission's report will bring forward  
16 a series of recommendations that we -- if we ever have a  
17 situation like this, we'd do much better for the public.

18                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so you said, you  
19 know, early on, it was clear that you were -- the City was  
20 overwhelmed and that it couldn't -- it didn't have the resources  
21 to handle this ---

22                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

23                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- not just on the  
24 police side, but on the municipal level as well. From the 31st,  
25 I think it became clear that this was not something that was  
26 going to just resolve itself on its own, and I'll come back to  
27 this point, could declaring a state of emergency earlier, as of,  
28 for example, the 31st of January, have signalled that the City

1 was overwhelmed, that it was treading water, and a signal to the  
2 other levels of government to act accordingly?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. Our staff were very clear  
4 that again, you know, I reiterate the fact that a municipal  
5 state of emergency, I think people see on television mayors in  
6 the United States cities declaring states of emergency with the  
7 powers they have. It wouldn't have made a big difference at  
8 all.

9 In hindsight, I suppose if I was to recommend to  
10 my successor -- we often get this question by the public and  
11 people get, "Why not exercise -- why aren't you declaring a  
12 state of emergency?"

13 In hindsight, you know, maybe we just declare it  
14 so it brings that peace of mind to the public that we know it's  
15 an emergency. We didn't need a document to know that this was  
16 an extraordinary, dangerous, serious situation that was going to  
17 have negative impacts on our residents, and quite frankly, the  
18 country.

19 And the frustration was that the reason why we  
20 wanted the RCMP there was the protestors were protesting federal  
21 legislation right across Parliament Hill, the prime minister's  
22 office. We needed provincial support as they did in Windsor  
23 because there was an economic imperative that our city not be  
24 shut down for three or four or five weeks.

25 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so aside from maybe  
26 signalling that need for assistance earlier with the state of  
27 emergency, what else could the City have done differently, and  
28 what else will the City do differently next time?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, we're going through the  
2 debate as to what to do with Wellington Street, for instance, so  
3 I think we're going to have a -- you know, there's a motion  
4 passed, many motions passed by my colleagues on council, and one  
5 of the motions passed clearly indicated that we have to do  
6 something to protect the parliamentary precinct, both in terms  
7 of who should be patrolling Wellington Street, the roles and  
8 responsibilities of PPS versus OPP versus OPS versus RCMP, and  
9 then the military police. So we're very much a jurisdictional  
10 challenge because we have so many different layers of  
11 responsibility.

12                   But you know, if I was looking back and had the  
13 ability to you know, change what was done early on, I would have  
14 insisted that we have barricades blockading Wellington Street as  
15 a first step, because as I said, I think it was symbolic on the  
16 part of the truckers. They wanted that as their backdrop, and  
17 you know, forcing them to come in on Slater or Albert or another  
18 parallel street to Wellington did not have the same effect or  
19 impact.

20                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

21                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** So now we're going through a  
22 dialogue with First Nations, with community groups, with all of  
23 the different policing organizations to determine what are we  
24 going to do with Wellington Street, because you know, we were  
25 concerned a few weeks after the convoy, there was the motorcycle  
26 rally that was somewhat disruptive, but much better contained  
27 with Chief Bell, Acting Chief Bell; and concerned about July  
28 1st. There was some protest, but it didn't amount to much. And

1 what's going to happen next February and January and March? Are  
2 they going to come back and try to repeat the behaviour that we  
3 saw this January and February?

4 So we have to be better prepared to protect those  
5 national symbols such as Parliament Hill.

6 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And you agree that it was  
7 unacceptable that residents would have to go through this for  
8 three weeks, right?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Absolutely. It was  
10 unacceptable for one day let alone three weeks, but we know  
11 that, you know, in a free society, people have the right to  
12 protest. But this went well beyond protest. It was illegal  
13 activity, hurtful activity, harmful to the public's health, and  
14 you know, I think the the Organizers, you know, seemed to show  
15 very little respect for the law and very little respect for  
16 coming into our neighbourhood. We even had members of  
17 Parliament going out and taking selfies and so on. And I asked  
18 those individuals who were critical of us moving them out, "How  
19 would you like to have 40 18-wheelers blaring their horn,  
20 literally 24 hours a day, spewing diesel fume, cooking a roast  
21 pig on a spit, throwing off fireworks at all hours, threatening  
22 people, being called, you know, homophobic slurs and racist  
23 slurs, how would you like that in your neighbourhood in  
24 Saskatoon, or Halifax, or Winnipeg, or Red Deer? You wouldn't  
25 tolerate it for a minute." Downtown Ottawa is not just some  
26 sterile environment called Parliament Hill. There are people  
27 that live there, thousands of people that live there. And they  
28 were affected the most, and, you know, we have to do better. If

1 this situation ever comes close to being repeated, we must do  
2 better for the people of Ottawa.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And I just want to ask  
4 you about the negotiation that happened with the protesters. We  
5 heard much more detail yesterday about that and we'll hear more  
6 detail in future I'm hoping with Superintendent Drummond's  
7 evidence. Can you just tell me, what was your understanding of  
8 the deal that was struck? What was the deal?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** The deal was to -- let me just  
10 backtrack for a moment. The reason why I went down this route  
11 was simply there was very little progress being made on any  
12 front to get the situation resolved. And my preoccupation  
13 number one was to bring some relief to the residential  
14 community. I wasn't as concerned about Parliament Hill or  
15 Wellington Street, even though those are important symbols in  
16 our country, but the people being affected the most were the  
17 people who were trying to get a good night's sleep and that were  
18 living in that red zone. And so I was approached, as you know,  
19 by Mr. French, who said he had contacts with trucking companies  
20 and those -- some of those that were involved. And he said,  
21 "I'm willing at no charge. I'm not doing this for money or  
22 anything else. I'm trying to be helpful." Because he was  
23 watching what everyone else was watching on television, this  
24 mess that was, you know, hurting so many different people and  
25 small businesses.

26 So I'd met him two or three times. He was the  
27 former Chief of Staff to the Premier Ford. I'd had occasion to  
28 deal with him in my capacity as Mayor and he as Chief of Staff

1 and was in two or three meetings with he and the Premier over a  
2 number of months. So I was a little skeptical. It was, you  
3 know, who does this guy know? You know, and I said, "I'm not  
4 interested in meeting them, but, you know, if you can come  
5 broker some kind of a deal to get trucks out of the residential  
6 community, good for you." So I referred him to my Chief of  
7 Staff, and I think Steve Kanellakos. And over a couple of days,  
8 they negotiated an agreement based on the letter that I sent to  
9 one of the organizers, Ms. Lich, indicating that I would be  
10 willing to meet with them on a number of conditions, and there  
11 are I think four different conditions. I think you have the  
12 letter. I don't want to give you the wrong conditions, but  
13 basically, you know, you got to get a number of trucks out of  
14 the residential area. They can't be replaced by other trucks.  
15 And if this is done and a couple of other things, then the Mayor  
16 would be pleased to meet with you.

17           This stemmed from the fact that the Police  
18 Liaison Teams approached the City because there was concern that  
19 communication had broken down between the liaison teams from OPS  
20 and the protest leaders. And as you know, there was not one  
21 united voice that spoke for the protesters. There were many  
22 different leaders and different camps.

23           So prior to Mr. French's call, Steve Kanellakos  
24 did meet with a number of the protesters in his office and heard  
25 them out. And when he told me they'd asked for a meeting, I was  
26 initially reluctant, not with me, but I said, "I'm not sure if  
27 this is a good idea for Steve." And he thought it was, and I  
28 said, okay.

1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** What were your concerns?

2                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you know, that we're  
3 meeting with this group that has been causing such damage and is  
4 this just a public relations stunt to get a couple of pictures  
5 to say, "Look, we've met with the top City bureaucrat, and we're  
6 going to meet with the mayor, and we didn't get anything in  
7 return." And, you know, remain the status quo.

8                   So they met, and Steve Kanellakos reported back  
9 that they seemed to be serious in their attempt to try to bring  
10 the temperature down. And then I believe a day or two after,  
11 that's when Mr. French got involved. We sent a letter, Ms. Lich  
12 sent a reply back, agreeing to the conditions. And they  
13 started, I believe on the 13<sup>th</sup> or 12<sup>th</sup> to move the trucks. The  
14 letter I think was the 13<sup>th</sup>. They started to move some of the  
15 trucks out of the residential areas onto Wellington Street.

16                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yes, I believe that was  
17 on the 14<sup>th</sup>, on the Monday the 14<sup>th</sup> they began. The 13<sup>th</sup> I think  
18 there was a meeting ---

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** The 13<sup>th</sup> it was the letter.

20                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yes. And the ---

21                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I think it was dated.

22                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- 13<sup>th</sup> there was a  
23 meeting to sort out the logistics and on the 14<sup>th</sup>, they started  
24 that movement.

25                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And the police assigned a  
26 senior officer to go down by basically outside of this building  
27 roughly, to coordinate the movement of those trucks. And my  
28 understanding -- sorry, go ahead.



1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** No, no, go ahead.

2                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** My understanding was that 40  
3 big rigs moved and there were upwards of 60 other vehicles of  
4 different sizes that started to move onto Wellington, away from  
5 the residential community. And then that process was stopped  
6 when the *Emergencies Act* was implemented, I believe, on the 14<sup>th</sup>.

7                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so in total  
8 about over -- about a hundred vehicles in total, 40 of them big  
9 rigs and the balance passenger vehicles and pickup trucks;  
10 right?

11                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Campers and things like that,  
12 so I think it was -- it totalled about 102.

13                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And do you know  
14 why the police stopped those operations? Did anybody from the  
15 police tell you, "This has been stopped for these reasons"?

16                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, my recollection was that  
17 Steve Kanellakos said as a result of the *Emergencies Act*, all of  
18 that activity was stopped and they had to redeploy all of our  
19 police officers to the main event, which was to take back the  
20 street.

21                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. But nobody from  
22 OPS said that to you? This was conveyed to you by Mr.  
23 Kanellakos?

24                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

25                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so in terms of  
26 the deal that was brokered, was it your understanding that this  
27 was meant to be a way to solve the situation, end what you had  
28 called the occupation, such that all of the protesters would

1 leave? Was that what this deal was for?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. No, we were under no  
3 illusions that it was going to solve the problem. It was going  
4 to solve one small part of the problem in a residential area  
5 along the streets such as, you know, Kent and O'Connor and so on  
6 where people live, get the out of harm's way. So, you know, and  
7 that was made very clear, you know, with my conversations with  
8 Serge who had discussions with Mr. French that this was not  
9 going to stop the rest of the activity that we were fighting  
10 against.

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And was the deal then  
12 that once they relocated to Wellington, was there any kind of  
13 assurance as to how long they could stay there then? Was the  
14 City giving them permission to occupy Wellington Street?

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, the deal was they were  
16 to move out of the residential areas onto Wellington Street  
17 where no one lives, as you know, on Wellington Street. They're  
18 just government buildings. And most of those were empty,  
19 because obviously, they were in the red zone. No one was  
20 working out of their office from a safety point of view. So it  
21 was very much trying to deal with one preoccupation that I had,  
22 which was the concern for those people in the residential areas  
23 who had been putting up with, you know, close to two weeks, two  
24 weeks plus of ear-slitting noise and, you know, train horns and  
25 so on.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But to your knowledge,  
27 did the City ever suggest that once they were relocated, they  
28 could stay there on Wellington, this was -- they would be then

1 protected from any kind of police action to remove them?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. No, there was no such  
3 part of the arrangement. The reality is that we were hoping  
4 that some of those individuals who, quite frankly, were blocked  
5 in by other trucks would decide to leave. And I was told by  
6 someone with the Police Service, I can't recall who it was, that  
7 in fact five or six of those trucks actually just left because  
8 it was -- you know, they were stuck behind three or four deep  
9 trucks. If they wanted to leave, they couldn't leave anyways.  
10 So I think this gave a little bit of relief to those people who  
11 felt they'd made their point and they had to go home.

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. But at that time,  
13 there are about 4 to 500 trucks occupying the downtown; right?

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, in the downtown. There  
15 were more at Coventry and more at Rideau and Sussex.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Now on February  
17 14<sup>th</sup>, we know that the *Emergencies Act* was invoked. Were you  
18 consulted on the invocation of the *Emergencies Act* before it was  
19 invoked?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I wasn't.

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Did the City  
22 request that it be invoked?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

24 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Did the City weigh in on  
25 whether it was required, necessary, or needed?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, when it was released, I  
27 think like most people, very few people knew exactly what the  
28 *Emergencies Act* was, to be perfectly honest. I remember growing

1 up in Quebec, what the *War Measures Act* was and the implications  
2 that had for the province of Quebec and the rest of the country.  
3 But no one had raised the *Emergencies Act* with us, but when it  
4 was invoked and I was briefed on what its powers were, I thought  
5 this is a very positive step to getting this situation resolved  
6 once and for all because of the provisions of the *Act*.

7           So I very much supported it, and I was -- as you  
8 may recall, the current chair of the Police Services Board, Eli  
9 El-Chantiry and I, sent a letter to the Prime Minister thanking  
10 him for invoking the *Act*, because it actually acted as the  
11 catalyst for us to move forward and get that whole situation in  
12 the downtown core resolved once and for all, and give people  
13 their street and their homes back.

14           **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And do you have any  
15 knowledge as to what measures under the *Act* were used in order  
16 to affect a police operation that ultimately ended the  
17 occupation?

18           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, the single biggest issue  
19 for us was that we did not -- even if we moved in, we didn't  
20 have the capacity to move the trucks out, because we had  
21 basically two OC Transpo large rig trucks, tow trucks, and so  
22 this compelled tow truck companies to provide this service. And  
23 I can tell you it sounds a little bit hokey, but you know, when  
24 I came out of City Hall after the *Emergencies Act* and I saw a  
25 whole row of tow trucks parked on Laurier Ave, I thought -- I  
26 never thought I'd see the day where I'm so happy to see a tow  
27 truck, because these tow trucks ended up doing an excellent job  
28 basically hauling all of the trucks, and trailers, and campers,

1 and everything else out of Wellington Street.

2 And you know, what they had to do, because the  
3 companies were still fearful there would be retribution by some  
4 of the trucking convoy, they had to put decals of the Ottawa  
5 Police Service over their company decal, almost deputising them  
6 with the logo, so that they wouldn't be harassed after the whole  
7 incident was over.

8 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But you don't have any  
9 knowledge as to where the tow trucks came from, or who procured  
10 them, or under what authority, right?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I'm assuming that it  
12 would have been a combination of the police in the City that  
13 procured them. I know for instance, I wrote to, or I texted  
14 John Torry, because I saw the number of tow trucks they had in  
15 Toronto, and I said where -- you know, do you have tow trucks  
16 that you can lend us? And he said, well, here's the names of  
17 three or four different companies in Toronto that we use,  
18 because he had some but he couldn't give up his TTC tow trucks,  
19 just as we couldn't give up our OC Transpo tow trucks. So he  
20 provided names and I passed that along to Steve Kanellakos and  
21 the City staff, and the tow trucks showed up because they had no  
22 choice, and they did great work, and they helped to speed up the  
23 cleanup of the street substantially.

24 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So just so I'm clear, do  
25 you know that these tow trucks were procured under the authority  
26 of the *Emergencies Act*, or is that your assumption?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, we were told by every  
28 tow truck company that they were not going to participate, and

1 then when the *Emergencies Act* was introduced tow trucks suddenly  
2 appeared. So I think the cause and effect was yes, the  
3 *Emergencies Act* compelled them. I read the section just the  
4 other day in preparation of this hearing, and it was made very  
5 clear that they were not going to be coming and helping us  
6 unless they were forced by law, and that's what the *Emergencies*  
7 *Act* did.

8 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So that's your  
9 assumption based on the fact that they were refusing to do it  
10 and then they showed up, essentially?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, yeah, I don't know the  
12 procurement policies ---

13 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- of OPS versus the City's  
15 procurement policy. We often procure vehicles, for instance,  
16 for the OPS, so whether it was OPS doing it directly, or the  
17 City of Ottawa, it was one or the other.

18 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. But you don't  
19 know?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't know definitively, no.

21 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And we know on  
22 February 15th that Sloly and OPSB reached a mutually agreeable  
23 separation. were you consulted on Chief Sloly's departure  
24 before it happened?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I received a press release  
26 like everyone else did that day.

27 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And did you have  
28 a view that you should or shouldn't be consulted or notified

1 when the Police Chief is going to be replaced or removed?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I thought it would be helpful  
3 that that information was shared by me. There's no requirement,  
4 I suppose, of the Board to do that. But it would have been  
5 helpful because if I was -- found myself in a scrum I was being  
6 told this for the first time it would've been nice to have a  
7 heads up about that.

8 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And on the 16th  
9 of February there was a City Council special meeting. Do you  
10 recall that meeting?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

12 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So this was the  
13 meeting after the *Emergencies Act* was invoked, and this is the  
14 meeting in which Chair Deans was removed as Chair, and of --  
15 well, as a Member of the Board. And so, my understanding is  
16 that you had communications with Chair Deans between Chief  
17 Sloly's resignation and before the council meeting?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

19 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Can you describe those  
20 discussions?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. It was on Zoom or Teams  
22 with myself, Steve Kanellakos, Robyn Guess from my office, Serge  
23 Arpin, and Councillor Deans, and I believe one of her assistants  
24 we're on the Zoom call. And she indicated it based on a press  
25 release that, I can't recall the exact wording, but it was  
26 something to the effect -- it's in the documents -- it's  
27 something to the effect that we're working on a new command  
28 structure. And I was curious about what this was, and it also

1 indicated a new command structure and hiring a new chief.

2 I thought, well, this seems a little strange.  
3 We're in the midst of a crisis. I didn't get into a long,  
4 detailed discussion with Councillor Deans about Chief Sloly's  
5 departure and whether he was fired, or resigned, or what the  
6 compensation package was. That was the business of the Police  
7 Services Board. But it was clear that Councillor Deans wanted  
8 to move quickly to bring in a new acting Chief, and that was the  
9 bulk of the discussion that we had that -- with that call.

10 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And you had a concern  
11 about that?

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I had a deep concern about it,  
13 because you know, we had Chief Sloly on one day, the next day we  
14 had Interim Chief Bell, and then the next day the Board was  
15 going to appoint another chief, so we had three chiefs in three  
16 days. That's not stabilizing for the situation that we were  
17 about to deal with in two or three days when the police moved in  
18 to resolve the situation.

19 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. But hiring a  
20 Chief of Police is within the exclusive purview of the Police  
21 Services Board, right?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

23 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So they didn't  
24 need to consult with you about that decision, did they?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Technically no, they didn't.  
26 But I thought, you know, I know for instance when chiefs have  
27 been hired in the past, the Board as a courtesy, would bring the  
28 individual or their proposed candidate to my office for a get to



1 know you session. And I was concerned about the instability of  
2 having three chiefs in three days, I didn't think that sent much  
3 confidence to the community, particularly when the chief -- my  
4 understanding -- was in Florida at the time and probably  
5 couldn't make it back, you know, in time to oversee the  
6 implementation of the plan to clean up Wellington Street, which  
7 took place that weekend.

8 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. But that  
9 decision was the Board's to make, right?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right.

11 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And Councillor Deans, or Chair  
13 Deans at the time, said to the effect, you don't want me to sign  
14 this contract, because the contract had not been signed. And I  
15 said, yes, I can't tell you what to do, because you are  
16 independent and autonomous, but I think it would be wise not to  
17 sign a contract until we get this situation stabilized in  
18 Ottawa, to have someone from another jurisdiction come and try  
19 to, you know, learn the street names, let alone the command  
20 structure that the Chief had put in place. And Chair Deans  
21 committed not to signing the contract, and then later that day  
22 it was discovered that in fact, she had signed the contract.

23 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Which she was entitled  
24 to do as Chair of the Board, right?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, but she'd indicated that  
26 she was not going to do it, because she understood my deep  
27 concerns about moving at that pace.

28 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And did you consider

1 that discussion with her about asking her not to sign the  
2 contract, or telling her that you wished her not to sign the  
3 contract, compromised the independence of the Board in any way?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I didn't think I did. It  
5 was ultimately her choice, and she said she wouldn't sign the  
6 contract, so I took her at her word.

7 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And very briefly,  
8 I will take you to OTT29762.

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And that date is?

10 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** This is the *in camera*  
11 council meeting minutes of February 16<sup>th</sup>.

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Okay.

13 **MS. NATHALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And at page 6 of that,  
14 Councillor Leiper, at the top:

15 "...observed that the Motion spoke [of] a  
16 loss of confidence in the Board, which was  
17 linked to the hiring decisions."

18 So it says there that the motion to remove the  
19 Chair as a member of the Board was linked to the hiring  
20 decisions.

21 Now, what we heard yesterday was that the motion  
22 was linked to a loss of confidence that you had lost in Chair  
23 Deans. Can you clarify what the -- why this Motion was brought  
24 forward to remove Chair Deans?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well you're correct. From my  
26 perspective, it was the decision to sign the contract, despite  
27 giving me assurance that she wouldn't sign the contract, number  
28 one. And secondly, the instability that that had. And thirdly,

1 that no on, really, outside of the Police Services Board was  
2 consulted. There was no public consultation with different  
3 groups in society, in civil society.

4 And in fact, it was two thirds -- about two  
5 thirds of Council that voted to remove Councillor Deans as a  
6 member of the Police Services Board, and the rest of the  
7 motions, including appointing Councillor El-Chantiry, who was  
8 then supported at their next Board Meeting to be made the new  
9 Chair of the Board.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And in this in-  
11 camera minutes, we don't see any mention of the assurances that  
12 the Chair gave to you, according to you, about not hiring a new  
13 chief, but that it was linked, rather, to the Board's hiring  
14 decisions.

15 And ultimately, as you know, the Chief that had  
16 been selected ultimately rescinded his offer to take on that  
17 role, ---

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right.

19 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- as a result of the  
20 turnover at the Board. You're aware of that?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. And after he sent the  
22 Board a note asking that his name been withdrawn from  
23 consideration, I phoned him to thank him for the gracious way  
24 that he dealt with a very awkward and potentially embarrassing  
25 situation to himself and his reputation and the fact that he was  
26 not going to pursue any action against the City and wished us  
27 well in our search, and it was a very civil and kind call from  
28 the former Chief of Waterloo, I believe.

1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And before the Motion was  
2 introduced at Council, you had asked Chair Deans to resign;  
3 correct?

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, she asked if I'd lost  
5 confidence in her, and at that point, at that meeting, I said,  
6 "I'm talking to Members of Council. I can't give you an answer  
7 on that." But then obviously when we learned that the contract  
8 had been signed, despite assurances it wouldn't be signed, I did  
9 lose confidence in her, and that's why I supported the motion by  
10 Councillor Moffatt, ---

11                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay.

12                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- and two thirds of Council.

13                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And do you consider that  
14 the turnover at the Board contributed to that instability that  
15 you were looking to avoid?

16                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well you'd have to ask the  
17 Province, because they rescinded the three appointees to their  
18 Board as well. But the reality was that the Board, as you know,  
19 does not involve itself in operational matters. It's policy,  
20 and budget driven.

21                   So, you know, the challenge we had was that I  
22 think there'd have been greater instability if we had Chief  
23 Bell, Interim Chief Bell, who was working on implementing the  
24 plan, signing off on it, and ready to deeply the officers into  
25 the red zone to clean it up, it would have been -- I think it  
26 would have delayed the process if you had someone from an  
27 entirely different jurisdiction who did not know, and this is no  
28 criticism to Mr. Torigan, but he wouldn't know the intricacies

1 of the City of Ottawa and their road grids and so on. that  
2 would have -- you know, if he was coming in on Monday, he would  
3 have said, "Don't start until I get there." I assume he'd want  
4 to be involved.

5 And so I was pleased that when Chief Bell, you  
6 know, oversaw the operation, we got sign off by the other police  
7 services, and the action that took place at -- on Wellington,  
8 Coventry, and Rideau, was quite remarkable at how quickly they  
9 moved it out and cleaned out the streets as fast as they did and  
10 as efficiently as they did, without losing a life.

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Thank you.

12 And I see the Commissioner glaring at me, so I am  
13 out of time. And those are all my questions for you. Thank  
14 you.

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you very much.

16 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. Thank you. So we're  
17 now into the second phase of the testimony. So if we could call  
18 on the Convoy organizers to go first?

19 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. BRENDAN MILLER:**

20 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Good morning, Mayor Watson.

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Good morning.

22 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** My name is Brendan Miller.  
23 I'm counsel for ---

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Afternoon.

25 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** --- Freedom Corp, which is  
26 an organization that represents the protestors that were in your  
27 city in January and February 2022. I'm just going to get set up  
28 here.

1                   So, Mayor Watson, following up on some of my  
2 friend's questions that have been put to you today, and how  
3 things have come out, do you agree with me that you did not  
4 handle the situation that was before you in January and February  
5 2022 properly?

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I think I would  
7 characterize it as given all the information and the  
8 circumstances, we did the best we could, which obviously was not  
9 good enough.

10                  **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. And can you agree  
11 with me that you politicized the protests and politicized the  
12 situation?

13                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I disagree with that.

14                  **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** You'd agree that the  
15 politicization of the matter, which you claim was not yourself,  
16 but that the matter was politicized by the Federal Government?

17                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

18                  **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Do you agree that making of  
19 the protests a political issue in the governance level created  
20 problems?

21                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

22                  **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right. Do you agree  
23 with me that the following governments and agencies handled this  
24 matter properly? First, the Government of Ontario?

25                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Ultimately, yes, they did  
26 handle it properly, but it took some time to get to that stage.

27                  **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. And the Ontario  
28 Provincial Police?

1           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Same.

2           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And the Ottawa Police  
3 Service?

4           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, they were on the ground  
5 from day one, but obviously, as I've expressed, I would have  
6 liked to have seen the intervention to bring back our streets to  
7 our people done much sooner.

8           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And so you've said  
9 that they were on the ground from day one; right?

10          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right. They were the  
11 jurisdictional police service.

12          **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And as the Mayor of  
13 a town, you don't have -- or the city, you don't have the  
14 security clearance or the clearance to know what the actual  
15 operational activities are of a police agency; correct?

16          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well it's not a security  
17 clearance matter. It's a matter that there's a separate  
18 autonomous organization called the Ottawa Police Services Board  
19 that has full jurisdiction over policy and governance of the  
20 Police Board, and the hiring and firing of four key officers,  
21 and that is their responsibility.

22                   The only direct link that the City has, as you  
23 may now from the *Police Services Act*, is that we approve or  
24 reject the budget of the police.

25          **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So I'm going to take  
26 you back. So I'll just be more narrow.

27                   So during the protests, you did not know what the  
28 operational activities were of the Ontario Provincial Police;

1 correct?

2                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I wouldn't know what their  
3 operational activities were, but they were coming under the  
4 jurisdiction and responsibility of the Ottawa Police Service.

5                   But again, I was never made aware of the  
6 operational plan, nor was I given the specific time that it was  
7 going to be launched, because it would be outside my  
8 jurisdiction. You can put two and two together, when you  
9 started to see more police arrive, you knew it was happening  
10 imminently, but I didn't have the specific date, nor should I.

11                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And so you see --  
12 you saw certain uniformed officers arrive; right? From the  
13 Ontario Provincial Police.

14                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I don't know if all of  
15 them were in their uniform. There were lots that were plain  
16 clothes, I suppose. But I saw a lot of OPP officers in Ottawa  
17 when we finally got to that 1,800 number. That's for sure.

18                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** You didn't know how many  
19 officers, really, the Ontario Provincial Police had here from  
20 January 26<sup>th</sup> until the invocation of the *Emergencies Act*; did  
21 you?

22                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well our Chief said that on  
23 average, we had about 50 to 55 police officers from OPP at  
24 different stages on a daily basis.

25                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right.

26                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** But nowhere near the 1,500  
27 that the Solicitor General referred to on one day.

28                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And so just in summary, you



1 had, with respect to their operational plans, and what they were  
2 doing, and everything that the police were up to, you did not  
3 know what they were doing, either the Ontario Provincial Police,  
4 or the Ottawa Police Service; right? They didn't tell you  
5 because they couldn't?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well there's Church and State.  
7 You know, there's a separation. The Police Services Board is  
8 autonomous under provincial legislation, and even the Board  
9 itself, and I sat on the Board for a number of years. But even  
10 the Board itself does not have the ability to direct the chief  
11 on an operational matter, you know? So if they wanted to get  
12 together and say, you know, "Pass a motion. We want you to go  
13 and, you know, take care of speeders on Carling Avenue for the  
14 next two months," that would be ruled out of order. It's not  
15 appropriate.

16 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So I just want to  
17 make it very clear, and I'd just like you answer this question,  
18 if you don't mind.

19 The Ontario Provincial Police and the Ottawa  
20 Police Service did not and could not update you on their actual  
21 operational plans, correct?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Not on the operational plans,  
23 but obviously, we received information in terms of their  
24 discussions with other police services in terms of securing  
25 those resources in the Nation's Capital.

26 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Now, you used to be the  
27 Communication Director for the Speaker of the House in federal  
28 Parliament; is that correct?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

2                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And you then became a member  
3 of provincial Parliament?

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I became a member of City  
5 Council.

6                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And then a member of  
7 provincial Parliament after that?

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, then mayor.

9                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Then mayor, and then a  
10 member of provincial Parliament after that?

11                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, then President of Canadian  
12 Tourism Commission.

13                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Well, congratulations. But  
14 at some juncture, you became a member of provincial Parliament,  
15 correct?

16                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** You got it now.

17                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right. Thank you very  
18 much.

19                   And when you became that member of provincial  
20 Parliament, it was with the Liberal Party of Ontario at the  
21 time; is that correct?

22                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

23                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And you then became the  
24 Minister of Municipal Affairs and Housing from October 30th,  
25 2007?

26                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

27                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And you held that office  
28 until January 12th, 2010?

1           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

2           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And the Minister of  
3 Municipal Affairs, that's the Ministry that oversees the City of  
4 Ottawa and all other municipalities under the *Municipalities*  
5 *Act*, right?

6           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, the minister is  
7 responsible for the Acts, you know? I'm not the overseer of  
8 municipalities, but they are my, I suppose, client, if you could  
9 put it that way, that any municipal issue, I was responsible for  
10 in Cabinet.

11           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. But you're very  
12 familiar, of course, then because you held that office, with the  
13 *Municipal Act*, correct?

14           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I am, yes.

15           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And you'd also be  
16 familiar with that as the mayor of the City?

17           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

18           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right. And the current  
19 Minister of Municipal Affairs and at the time of the protest was  
20 Mr. Steve Clark, right?

21           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

22           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And the City of Ottawa, like  
23 all municipalities across the country, it's a creature of  
24 statute that exists at the behest of the provincial legislature;  
25 is that correct?

26           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, constitutionally.

27           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Yes. And you agree that if  
28 the Provincial Parliament of Ontario wanted to, they could set

1 out how they want Ottawa to be governed, and can basically do  
2 what they wish in that regard, right?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Pretty much.

4 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Yeah. And you could agree  
5 with me that the City of Ottawa is treated the same by the  
6 Government of Ontario as any other municipality in Ontario,  
7 aren't they?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** It depends on the issue.  
9 There are sometimes where we feel that we're under served in  
10 terms of provincial grants and contributions, and other times,  
11 we feel we're treated fairly.

12 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. I've not seen in any  
13 of the many records in this proceedings that have been produced  
14 that at any time whatsoever that you contacted Minister Clark.

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't know if I had a call  
16 with Steve or not. I certainly had discussions with his  
17 colleague, Minister MacLeod on a number of occasions, and she  
18 was very helpful in relaying information. But really, the  
19 matter we were dealing with fell completely outside the  
20 jurisdiction of the Minister of Municipal Affairs and Housing.  
21 It was very much the Solicitor General who was the lead  
22 minister, and that was amplified by the fact that the premier  
23 brought her on the calls.

24 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. So the issue that you  
25 were facing was a resource issue; was it not?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Resource of people, yes,  
27 police officers.

28 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And as the former

1 Minister of Municipal Affairs, you know then that under section  
2 302 of the *Municipal Act*, that the minister may, upon such terms  
3 and conditions as it considers available or advisable, make  
4 grants and loans and provide other financial assistance to a  
5 municipality, right? You're aware of that?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

7 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And at no time did you ever  
8 ask for any form of financial assistance from Minister Clark,  
9 did you?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. I did with the premier.

11 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** You did with the premier?

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah.

13 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. But you and I both  
14 know from your former workings as the actual minister, that you  
15 go through the minister's office, right? You ask then for  
16 financial assistance and they can give you a grant and give you  
17 money to deal with things like protests on an emergency basis  
18 even if they want, right?

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. There has to be a program  
20 in place. You just don't go up to the Minister of Municipal  
21 Affairs and ask for a grant. We indicated to the premier very  
22 clearly, as I did with the prime minister and his ministers,  
23 that we are counting on those two orders of government, when  
24 this is all said and done and finished, that we would be keeping  
25 very close tabs of all of the extraordinary costs that we  
26 incurred in order to bring peace to our city, and both the prime  
27 minister and the premier said that, "We'll be there for you to  
28 help financially."

1           And we have since submitted all of our costs.  
2   It's in the tens of millions of dollars, because as you know,  
3   particularly when the municipal police services arrive, they  
4   have to be put up in hotels, they have to be given three meals a  
5   day, there's expenses. And we reimburse all of those  
6   municipalities. I, for instance, ran into the mayor of  
7   Belleville a few weeks ago here in Ottawa -- a few months ago,  
8   rather, at the AMO Conference, and he thanked us for the quick  
9   repayment of the invoice that they received. So the premier was  
10   very specific and very generous, as was the prime minister, that  
11   they would be here to help us financially because the protestors  
12   were coming, not to protest the Corporation of the City of  
13   Ottawa, they were protesting mandates that were imposed by the  
14   provincial and federal government. We happened to be the -- as  
15   I said, the meat in the sandwich. We're caught in this middle  
16   fight between protestors and two other orders of government that  
17   are responsible for various mandates with respect to COVID 19.

18           So you know, I wouldn't have gone to the Minister  
19   of Municipal Affairs and Housing because most of his funding on  
20   an emergency basis is through the DRAP Program, the Disaster  
21   Relief program. This was not a disaster.

22           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** So it wasn't a disaster?

23           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, it was a crisis.

24           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay.

25           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** A disaster is a natural  
26   disaster. The bad storm we had a little while ago; the flooding  
27   in 2017, 2019; the tornado in 2018; that's where we seek support  
28   of the Minister of Municipal Affairs and Housing, and also

1 through again, the Solicitor General when we called the army in  
2 to help with the sandbagging and the flooding in Ottawa.

3 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So the thing is  
4 this, can you agree with me, as the former Minister of Municipal  
5 Affairs, that having a program set out is not a requirement for  
6 the minister to give a city a grant? They can actually just do  
7 it under the *Municipal Act*, can they not?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, there has to be a  
9 program in place. There's not a slush fund that's kept by the  
10 Minister of Municipal Affairs and Housing that is there in case  
11 a bunch of truckers come and take over a city. There's no such  
12 program. You can't ---

13 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** No, I understand that. But  
14 what I'm saying to you is this, that the minister -- and when  
15 you were minister, you had the power to grant these grants, even  
16 if there was no program; is that not true?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, that's not true.

18 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay.

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And secondly, I'm not sure why  
20 we would be going to the Minister of Municipal Affairs and  
21 Housing for a grant. All we were asking for was the  
22 compensation to make us whole to ensure that we received after  
23 the whole situation had been resolved, to make sure that we had  
24 the necessary receipts -- and our treasurer is very good at  
25 this, along with the CFO of the Ottawa Police -- all of the  
26 costs were incurred. I think the figure was -- and I stand to  
27 be corrected -- well over \$36 million in costs. So that is  
28 being worked on now.

1                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. So the City of Ottawa  
2 then had adequate financial funds to deal with the protest?

3                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, we did.

4                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right.

5                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** We have healthy reserve funds.

6                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** So the only issue is was  
7 actually getting bodies, right?

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, getting bodies, yes, but  
9 also having the *Emergencies Act* so that we could get tow trucks  
10 and we could have a plan in place that once the police moved in,  
11 we could actually move those trucks that refused to move and tow  
12 them to a central location.

13                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** I just got something you  
14 said. You said you wanted the *Emergencies Act*?

15                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

16                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** You needed it to get the tow  
17 trucks?

18                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, we needed something to  
19 get the tow trucks because we were not successful. So when the  
20 *Emergencies Act* was introduced, and it was made clear  
21 specifically one line that towing was one of the requirements  
22 that people could not say no to, that was a big win for us in  
23 the City of Ottawa.

24                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And I take it, Mr.  
25 Mayor, that you have, of course, a relationship with probably  
26 numerous members of Parliament from your position as mayor in  
27 Ottawa, right?

28                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct, yes.



1                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Did anybody tell you before  
2 the *Emergencies Act* was invoked that it was coming?

3                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

4                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right. So you didn't  
5 know if you were going to get these powers or what have you were  
6 going to be ordered with respect to towing vehicles?

7                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. When the Act was  
8 introduced and my staff basically printed off a copy of the Act  
9 and highlighted those sections that we could use, the one that  
10 caught my attention the first was the towing capacity to clean  
11 up the situation in centre town and Byward Market.

12                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So you do know and  
13 you've already mentioned that of course, the Ottawa Police  
14 Service Board is independent of the Police Service, the Ottawa  
15 Police Service, and they have no ability to order operational  
16 sort of orders or bylaws, right?

17                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, they don't pass bylaws  
18 but ---

19                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And as the former Minister  
20 of Municipal Affairs, you also that, of course, the Province of  
21 Ontario, and Premier, and the Ministers at the provincial level,  
22 they have no ability to order the OPP to do anything with  
23 respect to resource either?

24                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

25                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So you know these  
26 two things, right ---

27                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

28                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** --- and you knew them at the

1 time?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

3 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And it would have  
4 been the Commissioner of the OPP that would be making those  
5 decisions, right?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, he was in contact with  
7 Chief Sloly.

8 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And at no time --  
9 and that's Mr. Thomas Carrique; is that correct?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

11 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And you agree with  
12 me that at no time while you were looking for these resources  
13 did you contact the Commissioner of the OPP to outline what you  
14 wanted, right?

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, that would be  
16 inappropriate.

17 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** That would be inappropriate?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** To contact an OPP officer.

19 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** He's the Commissioner of the  
20 OPP. What's the difference -- you're okay with having contact  
21 with the Prime Minister of the country but you're not okay  
22 having contact with the Commissioner of the OPP to ask him for  
23 what you need?

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Because we have a system in  
25 place where we do not have politicians interacting directly with  
26 police officers, or superintendents, or commissioners. That  
27 would highly inappropriate. That's why, as a politician, my  
28 counterpart is not the OPP Commissioner, it's the premier and

1 the minister responsible for the solicitor general, so it would  
2 be highly inappropriate. During this whole period, I did not  
3 once speak to the Commissioner of the OPP or the Commissioner of  
4 the RCMP -- completely inappropriate. So, you know, I dealt at  
5 the political level with members of parliament, members of  
6 Provincial Parliament, ministers, and the Premier, and the Prime  
7 Minister. That was my role in this period in our City's  
8 history.

9 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. And did you have  
10 phone calls with the Minister of Justice and the Premier with  
11 respect to what you needed?

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, we had discussions with  
13 the solicitor general and the Premier. And at the federal level  
14 it was the Minister of Emergency Preparedness and Public Safety,  
15 and the Prime Minister.

16 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And so, again, just  
17 in your statement that you provided, I didn't see when the dates  
18 were that you had these conversations with the Premier. When  
19 were they? What were the dates?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I'll have to look them  
21 up. I don't recall what they are but I believe it was in -- it  
22 was two or three during the month of, I believe, February.

23 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** February? So ---

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I stand to be corrected but I  
25 don't know the specifics. The Prime Minister's Office did  
26 provide a quasi-transcript so we have the specifics on that, but  
27 these calls that I had with the Premier were -- one of them was,  
28 basically, he called me on my cell phone; we had a long

1 discussion about the situation that was on the ground. And then  
2 the other was when of the Minister -- the solicitor general  
3 joined us and we had a discussion about the need for OPP  
4 officers.

5 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay.

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah.

7 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** So -- and I can tell you  
8 that the Prime Minister and the Premier were talking around that  
9 time, too, and he -- the Premier had told the Prime Minister,  
10 and I'm going to put it to you that he also to you, that he had  
11 no ability to order the OPP to provide you officers; it had to  
12 come from the Commissioner and OPP themselves, right?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

14 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And he told you  
15 that?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't know if he told me  
17 that but the solicitor general sent a letter, as we saw earlier  
18 today, indicating that she had sent our request -- the letter  
19 that Councillor Deans and I sent to the Premier and the  
20 solicitor general, she had sent that to the Commissioner of the  
21 OPP, which is the proper route, not telling him what to do,  
22 indicating that this request has come in and to please take the  
23 appropriate action.

24 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right, and the Premier told  
25 you that he wouldn't join the tripartite meetings because it was  
26 pointless.

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** He felt it was a waste of  
28 time.

1           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right, and it was.

2           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** How do you know that?

3           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Because you were looking for  
4 officers and they couldn't order officers.

5           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, that's -- I don't think  
6 you fully understand the situation, that I can't pick up the  
7 phone and start barking orders at a commissioner of any police  
8 service, whether it's the OPP or the RCMP. There's a protocol  
9 in place and that protocol is to have a politician-to-  
10 politician. And the RCMP and the Minister said the same thing;  
11 he can't direct Commissioner Lucki but he can certainly pass  
12 along our request. And she made the decision and we that her  
13 and the Commissioner because, at the end of the day, they did  
14 provide the resources that ended up cleaning up this terrible  
15 situation our residents found themselves in.

16           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And this protocol  
17 that you've been talking about and mentioned, is it in writing?

18           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, it's the law that  
19 politicians are not allowed to direct police services. It's  
20 very ---

21           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** I understand that but  
22 there's nothing that I know of, at least -- and if you could  
23 point me to it -- that says that you were prevented from either  
24 calling Commissioner Lucki or calling the Commissioner of the  
25 OPP and saying, "Hey, we need some more resources. Can you do  
26 this for us?"

27           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Again, I think that would be  
28 entirely inappropriate; you know, to give the powers of

1 operational responsibilities to politicians is a very slippery  
2 slope.

3 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** I'm not saying that, sir.  
4 I'm asking you if there's an actual policy that says you are not  
5 allowed to call and make a request to the police; is there a  
6 policy in that regard?

7 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, our City solicitor  
8 advised that the route that we should be taking is the letter to  
9 the Premier and the Prime Minister and the two appropriate  
10 ministers.

11 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay, so it wasn't a  
12 protocol; it was what the City solicitor told you to do?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I'm assuming that he  
14 would have told me what to do based on the law of the land.

15 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay.

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And the policy is very, very  
17 clear.

18 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** I'll ask him about that when  
19 he testifies.

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sure.

21 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** The other questions I have  
22 for you have to do with the mediator. Now, you had asked ---

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, with what?

24 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** The mediator.

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

26 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** You had asked the Federal  
27 Government if they could appoint an independent mediator; is  
28 that right?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

2                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And the Federal Government  
3 said no?

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

5                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And they said no  
6 because they didn't want to look like they were engaging with  
7 the protesters; is that right?

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** You'd have to ask them. I  
9 can't speculate why, although, as you know, there was a movement  
10 on the same day by two colleagues on Council to bring a  
11 resolution to Council to ask the Federal Government to allow a  
12 mediator to try to find a middle ground. That motion never made  
13 its way onto the Council agenda so ---

14                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And ---

15                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- Council didn't take a  
16 position.

17                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** --- you said that you had no  
18 issues with financial resources at the time, so why didn't you  
19 just hire a mediator?

20                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, again, the issue the  
21 protestors were in Ottawa was not to protest the City of Ottawa  
22 but federal and provincial mask mandates, among other issues  
23 that the truckers were upset with, so it was not really up to  
24 the City to start that kind of a broad-based mediation. What we  
25 did do, and what we were somewhat successful, was to secure and  
26 agreement by Ms. Lich and those truckers who fell under her  
27 jurisdiction, for lack of a better term, and I believe that was  
28 successful. We were able to get 40 big rigs and about 60

1 smaller ones out of the residential area and onto Wellington  
2 Street.

3 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right.

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** So that was not mediation,  
5 that was an individual, Mr. French, who came forward and  
6 offered, at no charge, the ability to see if there was some  
7 common between our police service and the protesters. But in  
8 terms of why the Federal Government didn't want to deal with a  
9 mediator, you'd have to ask them.

10 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** So Mr. French steps forward.  
11 He says, "I can help," and he finds some common ground and was  
12 going back and forth, of course, between the City and the  
13 protestors?

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

15 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** So he mediated the issue?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, he was a facilitator  
17 because he ended up getting a letter from me, and then a  
18 subsequent response from Ms. Lich, and the activities took  
19 place, I think, the next day, and then they were halted once the  
20 *Emergencies Act* was implemented, I believe, on the 14<sup>th</sup>.

21 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And after that  
22 agreement was done, the protestors followed the agreement and  
23 tried to get onto Wellington, and the only thing that ended up  
24 stopping them was the police; is that correct?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, the police were there,  
26 actually, to help facilitate and traffic-manage the congestion  
27 to bring them on to Wellington Street and away from the  
28 residential area. So a senior officer was assigned and my



1 understanding was that it worked quite well and then the  
2 *Emergencies Act* basically put a halt to that because all  
3 resources for police were needed to clear the area the following  
4 days.

5 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** I put it to you that after  
6 the *Emergencies Act* was invoked -- and you may have heard some  
7 of this evidence yesterday -- that there was just a change and  
8 that it was the City who decided not to follow through with the  
9 agreement with the protestors, and that was what happened with  
10 respect to that agreement.

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I believe that we did our  
12 best to live up to the agreement and as did the truckers, who  
13 did move, and we appreciate that ---

14 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right.

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- because that was the  
16 first time, as you know, where there'd been any kind of movement  
17 on the ground. There was a level of frustration. There was  
18 more and more rowdyism that was talking place on the streets of  
19 Ottawa and we felt, as my number one preoccupation was to  
20 protect those residents who had been putting up with horn  
21 honking 24 hours a day, diesel fumes that were coming into their  
22 apartments and condominiums, and general unruliness where people  
23 were afraid to leave their homes.

24 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And so you would  
25 agreed then, these statements that have been out by various  
26 people, that the protesters did not live up to the agreement are  
27 incorrect. In fact, they did.

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** So I'm not sure who you're

1 referring to.

2 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** There's been numerous ---

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** People ---

4 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** It's okay. But you agree  
5 that the protesters lived up to their end of the bargain; right?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** On that particular issue, yes.

7 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And you had early  
8 said in your evidence that, you know, you couldn't negotiate  
9 with these people rationally, but you did have that done in the  
10 end; didn't you?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I didn't get involved in  
12 it because I did not believe that I should be personally  
13 involved, but Mr. French acted as a go-between between the City,  
14 OPS and the group under Ms. Lich. And, you know, we were  
15 appreciative of Mr. French. He had really no skin in the game.  
16 He was not being paid for this. There was no business angle. I  
17 think he saw what was happening and ---

18 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right.

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- it was his capital as well  
20 and ---

21 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And, sorry, I don't mean to  
22 interrupt ---

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- took action.

24 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** --- but I just want to get  
25 my question answered. So they said -- you said early you  
26 couldn't negotiate with them rationally and you had no dealings  
27 with any negotiations with them except for the issue with Mr.  
28 French; right?

1           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I had one call -- one or two  
2 calls with Mr. French and then it was handed over to Mr.  
3 Kanellakos and Mr. Arpin.

4           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And so prior to that  
5 time, you had no attempt or nothing of involvement with respect  
6 to attempting to negotiate with the protesters; correct?

7           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

8           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right. So your  
9 statement earlier that you could not negotiate with these people  
10 rationally, you agree that the one time that you actually had  
11 any involvement whatsoever you did; right? You had a rational  
12 negotiation that resulted in an agreement; correct?

13           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I didn't because I wasn't  
14 involved until the final agreement ---

15           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** I understand.

16           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- put forward.

17           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. Thank you. Those are  
18 my questions.

19           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you.

20           **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. Thank you.

21           The next up is Mr. Sloly's Counsel.

22 --- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. TOM CURRY:

23           **MR. TOM CURRY:** Good afternoon, Mayor Watson.

24           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Afternoon.

25           **MR. TOM CURRY:** Commissioner, may I just before I  
26 begin note or ask you what your preference is about the lunch  
27 break? Should we -- I have I believe 25 minutes. Could we rise  
28 at one o'clock? Would that be ---

1                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** We certainly can. We can  
2 take 10 minutes ---

3                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Ten (10) minutes ---

4                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** --- now and 15 minutes  
5 after lunch.

6                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Very good. Thank you.

7                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** So break you up into two  
8 parts.

9                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Thank you very much.

10                   Mayor Watson, a couple of things if I can,  
11 please, this afternoon. You told the Commissioner that  
12 throughout this experience, Chief Sloly had your confidence?

13                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

14                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And that was right up until the  
15 time he resigned?

16                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

17                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Chief Sloly, to your observation,  
18 you obviously were speaking with him during this time on a daily  
19 basis?

20                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Almost daily, yes.

21                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Almost daily. During the time  
22 that you worked with him and observed him, do you agree that he  
23 performed his duties in good faith?

24                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** He did. Obviously, I was not  
25 involved behind the scenes, but certainly in any dealings he had  
26 with me or senior City staff, we came away confident and  
27 impressed, number one. And secondly, I thought he was a very  
28 good communicator. He was reluctant to have daily press

1 conferences, which was a bit of a bone of contention, but when  
2 he did, I thought he handled himself with distinction.

3 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Thank you. And I was going to  
4 say, you obviously were not with him during all of the entirety  
5 of these operations, but in your observation of him with your  
6 colleagues, whether they be political -- members of Council, or  
7 political staff, or City staff, he was always professional?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** He was. I think if I could  
9 just elaborate on that, I think he found the non-stop flow of  
10 questions and complaints and so on stressful, as we all did.  
11 And I think at times, he probably was frustrated himself with  
12 the volume of work that was coming in and legitimate questions  
13 by members of Council because as you know, the members of  
14 Council were representing the voices of those people  
15 particularly in Sommerset ward and Rideau Vanier that were under  
16 tremendous stress. And that stress percolated its way up to  
17 everyone within the organization including the Chief. But I  
18 certainly -- you know, I never saw him be disrespectful to any  
19 member of Council. I think he was firm from time to time with a  
20 few members of Council that what you're proposing Mr. or Mrs.  
21 Councillor is illegal, but I never saw him lose his cool.

22 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Right. Thank you. And finally,  
23 like you and like probably every other person involved in this  
24 on the City side, just confining ourselves to that for the  
25 moment, he worked around the clock?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, and I think that's the  
27 same case for his command team ---

28 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Right.

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- and a lot of our staff and  
2 so on. I -- as I said, on -- what I saw of him, I had his  
3 confidence, or I was confident in him. I don't know what was  
4 going on behind the scenes in terms of the ---

5                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Yeah.

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- operations. I'd heard  
7 through Mr. Kanellakos there was a level of division within the  
8 various police forces. Having never been involved in a protest  
9 or an occupation of this magnitude, I would not have any  
10 knowledge to compare that kind of give and take that we heard  
11 was taking place behind the scenes. But certainly, it was my  
12 expectation that he would continue to see the operation through  
13 and clean out Wellington and Rideau Centre and Overbrook-Forbes.

14                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Understood. Now just a couple of  
15 things then. You observed and -- that what occurred here in  
16 Ottawa last January and February was unprecedented, first of  
17 all.

18                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

19                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And also, something that had  
20 probably not been witnessed for two generations.

21                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you know, as I mentioned  
22 earlier to the Commissioner and to Commission Counsel that, you  
23 know, I've been in public life as a political representative for  
24 25 years, and nothing comes close to this. Now, I think  
25 obviously COVID, because it affected so many people in Ottawa,  
26 over 800 people died, that was a bigger challenge, but in a  
27 condensed period of time and a condensed section of the city,  
28 nothing compares to what we went through. And I think the vast

1 majority of people who saw what was going on empathized with our  
2 citizens, but there were those who thought it was no big deal,  
3 and that was what was frustrating I think for myself and the  
4 frontline officers and the Chief.

5 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Including, as you've described to  
6 the Commissioner, your effort to try to engage the other levels  
7 of government, the province, the federal government was the  
8 source of some frustration for you on the basis that they did  
9 not come to the aid of the City and its residents on a -- in a -  
10 - in what you would have thought was a timely fashion.

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I wanted it to move faster. I  
12 suspect the federal government will say, "Well, you don't have  
13 your plan ready yet, so why are you asking for resources?" But  
14 we knew, regardless of what the plan was, there was going to be  
15 a need for a significant number of new police officers coming  
16 in, particularly public order police officers, those that  
17 basically deal with crowd control. So regardless of the fact  
18 that we didn't have all of the Ts crossed and the Is dotted on  
19 the plan, we needed, and we knew there was going to be lag time  
20 by the time you make the decision and the time they get on a  
21 plane and arrive in Ottawa and get geared up, it was going to  
22 take some time. So, yes, you know, the frustration I have and  
23 where I think there was a failure point was I wish all order of  
24 government had worked faster to get the plan ready and to get  
25 the officers on the ground and we could have resolved this  
26 hopefully by the end of week one instead of week three.

27 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Very difficult -- I think this is  
28 -- tell me if you agree, very difficult to finalize a plan, an

1 operational plan until you know what resources you have; do you  
2 agree?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I'm not a police expert,  
4 so I can't give you an informed decision. I can certainly on  
5 the surface of it, we knew that we were going to need hundreds  
6 and hundreds of police officers because we were outnumbered a  
7 hundred to 1 or 200 to 1. You just have to see the video of the  
8 raves and the dance parties and the honking of the horns, and  
9 all of the other activities that were taking place. It really  
10 stole neighbourhoods away from the people who live in them.

11 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Right. What -- perhaps more  
12 precisely, what I was getting at is that if the RCMP or the OPP  
13 in the aggregate had told the City through the proper channels -  
14 --

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

16 **MR. TOM CURRY:** --- that instead of 1800 or 1900  
17 additional personnel, the only personnel available was 1,000 in  
18 the aggregate?

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

20 **MR. TOM CURRY:** What -- I understand you were --  
21 in listening to your OPS colleagues and Mr. -- and Steve K and  
22 others, was it that the finalisation of a plan would require  
23 some knowledge of what that number is?

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's true.

25 **MR. TOM CURRY:** If you're sending a thousand  
26 people, the plan is different than if you're sending 1,900; do  
27 you agree?

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** On the surface that is --



1 makes eminent sense, yes.

2 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Now, Commissioner, may I suggest,  
3 then, I think I've just about one o'clock. Would -- can we rise  
4 here and ---

5 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Yeah. We'll rise until  
6 two o'clock.

7 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Thank you, Mayor.

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you.

9 **THE REGISTRAR:** The Commission is in recess until  
10 two. La Commission est levée jusqu'à 14 heures.

11 --- Upon recessing at 1:00 p.m.

12 --- Upon resuming at 2:00 p.m.

13 **THE REGISTRAR:** Order. à l'ordre. The  
14 Commission is reconvened. La Commission reprend.

15 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Good afternoon. Bonne  
16 après-midi.

17 You're ready to go?

18 **MR. TOM CURRY:** All set.

19 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay.

20 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Thank you. Merci.

21 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you.

22 --- MAYOR JIM WATSON, Resumed:

23 --- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. TOM CURRY (cont'd):

24 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Mayor Watson, a couple of things,  
25 please, if I can about the -- cast your mind back to it, to the  
26 period before the convoy protest came to Ottawa in January. I  
27 think you touched on this. The City of Ottawa has a long  
28 experience with public protests?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** We do, yes.

2                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Besides quite apart from all of  
3 the events that are held by the City, and there are many of  
4 them, as the home to the nation's capital and Parliament, the  
5 City has a long tradition of respecting the democratic right to  
6 protest?

7                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

8                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And including protests against  
9 mandates and restrictions that were imposed by provincial or  
10 federal government as a consequence of the pandemic?

11                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

12                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And in terms of the use of  
13 vehicles, or in the bringing to Ottawa, if I can put it that  
14 way, of vehicles by protesters, the City also has a long  
15 experience of allowing, facilitating vehicles to come to the  
16 city?

17                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, on occasion there's been  
18 arrangements made where they'll park on Wellington Street. For  
19 instance, I know there was a farm protest sometime ago, and that  
20 was arranged in collaboration with the police liaison, and it  
21 worked well, and they left after they had their speeches.

22                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And in this case, as you pointed  
23 out to the Commissioner, the expectation was that the protesters  
24 would arrive in vehicles, make their point, demonstrate, and  
25 pack up and leave?

26                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I think most objective people  
27 would see that as a most likely scenario. There was no thought  
28 that this thing was going to drag on for three weeks, when...

1 You know, the first time I saw some trucks on Wellington was the  
2 Thursday before the Friday, and I think there were two or three  
3 pickup trucks with some flags and that was it, and then  
4 obviously we received a lot more vehicles on the Friday and the  
5 Saturday and it jammed the street.

6 **MR. TOM CURRY:** There was no indication, of which  
7 you were made aware of, that the protest was either expected to  
8 last as long as it did or to be conducted in the fashion that it  
9 was; correct?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I had no information that it  
11 was going to go on for three weeks. I think we saw early on  
12 there was a little bit of disorganisation in terms of timing of  
13 speakers which pushed their agenda backs, and I thought, you  
14 know, worst case scenario they'll be gone back home by Sunday.

15 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Right. and am I also right that  
16 from your perspective as the Mayor of the City of Ottawa there  
17 was no indication from your policing partners at the OPP or the  
18 RCMP that you should consider this protest to be any different  
19 than protests of a similar kind in the past?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** To the best of my knowledge, I  
21 don't recall receiving any briefing of that nature. That  
22 would've been through the police to the City Manager because  
23 obviously there are implications for city services, rerouting of  
24 busses, and parking regulations and so on.

25 **MR. TOM CURRY:** And had there been a plan to, or  
26 had there been information that suggested that the trucks should  
27 be intercepted and not permitted into the city, then obviously  
28 your City Manager and the staff below him would have had to

1 engage in a traffic plan and some operations to put the trucks  
2 somewhere other than residential neighbourhoods around  
3 Parliament Hill?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. So as you know, the  
5 jurisdiction for the highway as an entry on to and off highways  
6 is the provincial government through the OPP, not the OPS.

7 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Got it. Two other quick things  
8 about this, please. Did you understand that Chief Sloly had  
9 engaged his Command team and that Acting Deputy Chief Ferguson  
10 was responsible for the Operations plan ---

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

12 **MR. TOM CURRY:** --- and the Deputy Chief, Bell,  
13 was responsible for Intelligence?

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's my understanding, yes.

15 **MR. TOM CURRY:** And did you also know that before  
16 the weekend protesters arrived Chief Sloly or his delegates had  
17 already secured additional police resources from other municipal  
18 police forces under Memorandums of Understanding that exist?

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I knew he was making  
20 those calls with other chiefs, I don't know the extent of it,  
21 but my understanding, over the last 25 years, is that, you know,  
22 there's a reciprocal agreement when police services need help.  
23 We've often been sent to help in circumstances outside our  
24 jurisdiction and vice versa. So that -- I just assumed that  
25 would be taking place because he has those contacts across the  
26 province.

27 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Got it. Can I just show you a  
28 memorandum? I hope I have the number correctly; it was a memo

1 that I think you sent.

2                   It's -- can I have some assistance, just please,  
3 in dialing up OTT -- I think four zeros; it might be five, 746.  
4 And I have ".001" afterwards, if that helps.

5                   Just bear with me, Mayor Watson, see if you  
6 recognize this document.

7                   Yeah, just maybe start there. You see it says,  
8 "Draft response to demonstration emails (McKenny comments); it's  
9 dated Thursday, the 27<sup>th</sup> of January. Do you see that?

10                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I do, yes.

11                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And you introduced the name to us  
12 earlier, I think, Robyn Guest; that's a member of your staff?

13                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Director of Policy, correct.

14                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And then there are a couple of  
15 other people to whom that email is addressed at the top,  
16 including a witness who appeared yesterday, your Chief of Staff,  
17 Mr. Arpin.

18                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

19                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Could we just scroll down,  
20 please, for the Mayor? Just stop there, if we could, please?

21                   Do you recognize this as memorandum that was  
22 prepared either at your direction or the direction of your staff  
23 for the purposes of communicating with your colleagues on  
24 Council?

25                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I think -- can you scroll so I  
26 can see the whole memo, please?

27                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Yeah, sure.

28                   Could we please? Just -- I think ---

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** The other way.

2                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** --- the other direction,  
3 probably.

4                                   **(SHORT PAUSE)**

5                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. This -- this was a  
6 letter that was a draft for people writing me via email about  
7 the convoy. Because the gentleman it's from, if you scroll up  
8 to the top again, Ben Poirier, he's our correspondence officer  
9 in the Mayor's office. So he would have received a draft from  
10 probably Robyn Guest, in terms of this was the template that we  
11 would use initially when people started to write in with  
12 concerns about the convoy.

13                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Understood. And I won't go  
14 through all of it, but you described a reference to past  
15 practice, to the right to protest in our democracy, and the  
16 plans that were in place for a safe weekend.

17                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

18                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Okay, understood.

19                                   Okay, that's fine. Thanks very much.

20                                   Along the way a little later, you had -- and  
21 again, when I say "You had" the City has a solicitor, I think  
22 David White.

23                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

24                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** And Mr. White was requested to  
25 prepare a set of options that I think were legal options; I  
26 don't know if this came as a consequence of a direction that you  
27 gave or perhaps someone under your direction.

28                                   But could I please show the Mayor OTT0029767?

1           I just want to, while that's coming up, Mayor  
2 Watson, just to orient you; I believe that Mr. White prepared a  
3 set of options -- a list of options rather, that could be  
4 considered by Council in respect to the ongoing demonstration.  
5 Do you see that? It's dated February the 7<sup>th</sup>. Does this refresh  
6 your recollection that Council or you directed Mr. White to  
7 prepare that list?

8           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, this is a memo to  
9 Councillor Deans, so I assume, based on the wording of the first  
10 paragraph, she'd asked for this information, not my office. But  
11 I remember seeing this. It was interesting to look at the  
12 different Acts that were out there, but this was something that  
13 I believe Councillor Deans had asked for and it was sent to her  
14 from Julia Keast.

15           **MR. TOM CURRY:** And among the options that were  
16 addressed in this memorandum of course we see that three of the  
17 *Federal Emergencies Act*, and there are a number of others,  
18 including the final one concerning injunctive relief. Do you  
19 see that?

20           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I do, yes.

21           **MR. TOM CURRY:** Were you engaged in any of the  
22 discussions that were ongoing about whether an injunction was  
23 available and advisable?

24           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I know that Chief Sloly  
25 had asked -- I can't recall the exact date but asked for staff,  
26 legal staff for the City of Ottawa to consider an injunction, I  
27 believe on the 30<sup>th</sup> of January; I stand to be corrected on that.  
28 And then there was the City asked legal staff to draft an

1 injunction to enforce municipal bylaws on February 11<sup>th</sup>, and they  
2 got the injunction on the 14<sup>th</sup>. But, unfortunately, then the --  
3 well, not unfortunately but subsequently the *Emergencies Act*  
4 overrode the injunction.

5 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Understood.

6 And so that's fine, thanks for the memorandum.  
7 We can take that down.

8 As to the *Emergencies Act*, you've explained to  
9 the Commissioner your perspective about that. From your  
10 observation, the *Emergencies Act* played an important role in the  
11 peaceful resolution of these demonstrations.

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** It very much did, yes.

13 **MR. TOM CURRY:** And the police services that were  
14 on the ground were -- provided additional powers, not just to  
15 deal with those who were occupying those spaces, but also to  
16 deal with anyone who might wish to come and participate in the  
17 future.

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

19 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Okay. Can I just ask you now,  
20 please, about resources. You explained that Chief Sloly was  
21 requested to provide a detailed list of the resources --  
22 particularized resources that the OPS required. You recall  
23 that?

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

25 **MR. TOM CURRY:** And am I right that he was asked  
26 to do that on February 5<sup>th</sup> at the -- by Chair Deans and the  
27 Police Services Board?

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I believe that's correct.



1           **MR. TOM CURRY:** And then provided it the next  
2 day, February 6<sup>th</sup>.

3           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. And we had to redraft  
4 the letter and decided that both Councillor Deans and I would  
5 sign the letter that was sent to the Premier, Minister Jones,  
6 Prime Minister Trudeau, and Minister Mendicini [*sic*].

7           **MR. TOM CURRY:** And prior to February 5<sup>th</sup>, do I  
8 have it that Chief Sloly had already engaged in the process of  
9 trying to get more resources for the OPS from not just through  
10 the weekend but right up -- well, through the whole piece?

11           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. My understanding was  
12 that Chief Sloly was making many calls to other police agencies,  
13 municipal police services across the country, and that was  
14 taking a fair amount of time, but at the end of the day I think  
15 it was helpful because they supplemented the resources that we  
16 got from the OPP and the RCMP.

17           **MR. TOM CURRY:** And the detailed resources plan  
18 that the Chief provided and his team provided on the 6<sup>th</sup> of  
19 February, as you told the Commissioner, set out not just a raw  
20 number of 1,800, but it was broken down by uniformed police  
21 officers, non-uniform personnel, public order units, and various  
22 other specialties.

23           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. So it's quite detailed,  
24 and to my surprise there were, you know, references to  
25 additional resources for jails and lawyers and other people, not  
26 just frontline officers. So it was quite a detailed request,  
27 and that was the basis of the letter that we sent to the two  
28 other orders of government, correct.

1                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Thank you. And you and Chair  
2 Deans and certainly Chief Sloly were under -- I'll say pressure  
3 but small "p" pressure from your Council members to answer  
4 questions about not just these resources, but to identify that  
5 specific number that Chief Sloly had given and that you had  
6 conveyed, in public; is that correct?

7                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. I don't know when that  
8 number became public but at some point we knew it was going to  
9 get out. But I think the concern on the Police Service's part  
10 was that it was best that it not be public because that shows  
11 our hand, to a certain degree, in terms of the magnitude of the  
12 police operation to clean up our city.

13                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Understood. And just you got to  
14 the question I was going to ask; and just to confirm, it wasn't  
15 Chief Sloly's idea to publish that number; it was -- as you  
16 pointed out, it was inevitable that it was going to come out  
17 once there was this caught-in-the-middle status and political  
18 requirements.

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

20                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Okay. Now, can I just ask you  
21 quickly, then, a couple of other things about the news  
22 conference where Chief Sloly made the reference, I think it was  
23 February the 2<sup>nd</sup>, that, among other things, there may not be a  
24 policing solution to this problem. Did you understand, or do  
25 you now understand that what he was getting at was the very  
26 issue about resources; that the Ottawa Police Service on its own  
27 did not have the resources to deal with this as a matter of its  
28 own police service?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, initially I didn't  
2 understand that to be the case. I just thought he might be  
3 saying we need, you know, whether it's a mediator or, you know,  
4 some other resource to solve this. And most people, I think,  
5 were under the impression -- they were scratching their head  
6 wondering, "Well, if it's not going to be a police operation,  
7 what other kind of operation is there?" So I think, given time,  
8 that makes more sense when he says it's not going to be a police  
9 operation, because he doesn't have the resources. But, at the  
10 time, I was surprised that he'd said it that way and didn't  
11 really elaborate or clarify what he meant.

12                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Subsequently, of course, he was  
13 asked about it and did provide additional clarification.

14                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I believe that is the case,  
15 correct.

16                   **MR. TOM CURRY:** Now, and as to that issue -- I  
17 think you've explained this to the Commissioner but just so that  
18 I have it -- there was never going to be a solution to this  
19 problem unless there were a lot more police service members than  
20 Ottawa Police Service members?

21                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Absolutely, yeah. There's no  
22 way -- I think any -- even a layperson like myself recognized  
23 that the Ottawa Police Service was outnumbered in terms of the  
24 resources they had. Plus, as I mentioned earlier, we have a  
25 whole city to police. We can't take all of the police from  
26 rural Ottawa and suburban Ottawa; there's still calls and  
27 activities that require police services. They couldn't all go  
28 down to the Byward Market or Centretown. That's why we needed

1 to supplement them with the other two forces plus municipal  
2 forces.

3 **MR. TOM CURRY:** And do you share the view that  
4 there wouldn't have been any different outcome no matter who was  
5 the Chief of Police if the matter was the resources?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, I truly believe that. We  
7 needed those 1800. That was the best estimate of the police  
8 service and their expertise. And in combination, we also needed  
9 the *Emergency Act* or I believe, truly, that we would have been  
10 at a stalemate for several more weeks, which would just be  
11 intolerable for the public.

12 **MR. TOM CURRY:** And then, just to then final, two  
13 quick things, then, if I may, Mayor Watson. The resignation, I  
14 appreciate that you've told the Commissioner that you learned of  
15 it when it was announced. Did you have a chance to speak to  
16 Chief Sloly in the aftermath of the resignation?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I did. It was several weeks  
18 later. I invited him to lunch to say thank you for his service.  
19 I think when these things are done in a public fashion, it's not  
20 the kindest way to bid goodbye and to thank someone who had  
21 served their community so I brought him to a restaurant and we  
22 had lunch. We didn't get into a lot of the details, obviously,  
23 of what he went through but I just thought it was my opportunity  
24 to thank him for his service.

25 **MR. TOM CURRY:** And I think you've previously  
26 that you regarded his resignation as a true act of leadership?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, you know, obviously  
28 there were concerns on the part of some members of the Police

1 Services Board and I think he did the honourable thing, and I  
2 stated that in a statement I released.

3 **MR. TOM CURRY:** There was -- with your  
4 indulgence, Mr. Commissioner, I have one -- Mayor Watson, I'm on  
5 borrowed so that means you're on borrowed time. Could I just  
6 ask you one quick thing, please, about negotiation to remove  
7 trucks from the residential area? I won't show you the letter  
8 that was already described that you wrote to Ms. Lich, and her  
9 response, and so on, but do I -- can I have it from you that, in  
10 respect of Chief Sloly -- that Chief Sloly was unaware of the  
11 final destination of the trucks that were moving out the  
12 residential area and the letter that you wrote to Ms. Lich  
13 doesn't describe the final destination of those trucks. There  
14 were some references that we've seen in other documents to  
15 renting farmland -- to leasing farmland, rather, or to parking  
16 on the Sir John A. MacDonald Highway. There was some  
17 flexibility or uncertainty about those matters; is that fair?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, there was no reference  
19 specifically to Wellington but it -- just common sense would  
20 dictate, if they're coming down from where the Garden of the  
21 Provinces is, into that area, around this building, in fact,  
22 that it would be onto Wellington because there was space on  
23 Wellington. Whether the Chief knew immediately or not, I'm not  
24 sure, but a senior officer was assigned to help with traffic  
25 management, of getting those 102 vehicles out of the site.

26 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Understood. Thank you very much.  
27 And your term as mayor is coming up, so thank you for your  
28 public service.

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** In 22 days, I think, four  
2 hours.

3                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** And counting.  
4                   The Ottawa Coalition, please.

5 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. PAUL CHAMP:**

6                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Thank you, Commissioner  
7 My name is Paul Champ, Mayor Watson. I ---

8                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Hi.

9                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** --- represent the Ottawa  
10 Coalition of Residents and Businesses. I just have a few  
11 questions for you, Mayor, following on your testimony.

12                   One question that you just answered to previous  
13 counsel, you'd indicated that there was no indication that this  
14 protest was going to last. But wasn't it true, Mayor Watson,  
15 that we were aware that -- by the time they arrived in Ottawa,  
16 even that first weekend, that they had raised several millions  
17 of dollars on GoFundMe to, you know, keep providing them with  
18 fuel, and food, and other resources? We knew about that,  
19 correct?

20                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't recall exactly when  
21 were informed about the GoFundMe. The first time I had any  
22 contact with GoFundMe was when their consultant approached my  
23 office and, as a result, we had a discussion with three of their  
24 senior people asking them to do what they could to prevent the  
25 dollars from coming into the community, and they subsequently --  
26 I think a week later -- agreed to freeze the account. And then,  
27 ultimately, my understanding was that the money was returned to  
28 the individual donors.

1                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Another question or area I  
2 wanted to ask you about is your communications with the Chair of  
3 the Ottawa Police Services Board. Now, it's my understanding,  
4 Mayor Watson, that you and Ms. Deans, the Chair, you, generally  
5 speaking, wouldn't communicate directly. It would be through  
6 your Chief of Staff, Mr. Arpin; is that correct?

7                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, almost all of the back  
8 and forth on this issue was dealt with by Councillor Deans and  
9 Mr. Arpin, correct.

10                  **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** You and Ms. Deans, she doesn't  
11 have your phone number; the two of you don't directly; is that  
12 correct?

13                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't believe she has my  
14 phone number. Actually, very few people do have my phone  
15 number. I never keep the ringer on so I don't rely on that very  
16 often. But she had a good rapport with Mr. Arpin and he'd brief  
17 me on any item and we did have at least one Teams call, or two,  
18 during the course of the occupation.

19                  **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Well, while we're on it, Dean  
20 French, he's got your phone number, correct?

21                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I believe he does from my time  
22 at -- when I met with him through the Premier's Office.

23                  **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** You -- throughout this protest,  
24 you've told us that you would have regular communications with  
25 Chief Sloly; is that right?

26                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, or his deputies.

27                  **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Well, yeah, and that's what I --  
28 that was my next question. How much or how often would you

1 speak with his deputies -- Deputy -- Acting Deputy Chief  
2 Ferguson and Deputy Chief Bell?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** More with Deputy Chief Bell  
4 because I knew him better. It would vary. Sometimes it would  
5 be one or two calls a day, sometimes there would be no calls if  
6 there's no information. I often got a lot of information from  
7 the police via Steve Kanellakos, which was the more appropriate  
8 route, and he would provide me updates. As you know, or as you  
9 may know, Mr. Champ, my office is right next to Mr. Kanellakos  
10 so we'd see each other literally every hour during the crisis.

11 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** So you were getting some  
12 information from Chief Sloly and sometimes from his delegates,  
13 primarily Deputy Chief Bell?

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct.

15 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Okay. And Deputy Chief Bell had  
16 your phone number?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't know if he did or not.  
18 I'm not sure.

19 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** How would the two of you  
20 connect?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, usually through a Teams  
22 or a Zoom meeting, or he'd be in my boardroom.

23 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And what about Acting Deputy  
24 Chief Ferguson, how often did you speak to her?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't recall I had any  
26 conversations with her. I think, at some point, she was --  
27 there was one point, I think, she was on leave but I didn't  
28 really know her. I saw her at press conferences, for instance;



1 when there was a press conference she was often there with the  
2 Chief and the other Deputy.

3 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Now, we heard your testimony,  
4 Mayor Watson, that you were hearing from both the federal level  
5 and the provincial level that there were some concerns about the  
6 Ottawa Police Services' operational plans to bring an end to the  
7 occupation; correct?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct, yes.

9 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And you'd heard a little bit  
10 that because of some dispute or disagreement about the OPS  
11 operational plans, this was causing some delay in the deployment  
12 of boots on the ground?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I wouldn't equate that --  
14 the lack of a plan with the request for boots on the ground. We  
15 needed both. We needed a plan, but we also knew that it was  
16 going to require a significant amount of time just simply to get  
17 these police officers from coast to coast to coast to arrive in  
18 Ottawa and get them set up and get them sworn in, if they were  
19 RCMP or municipal police services from other jurisdictions in  
20 Canada. So the two had to go in tandem, and I think as the  
21 previous lawyer talked about, the reality is that you -- we knew  
22 that we needed 1,800, and we had to be flexible enough to  
23 determine if we're only going to get 1,000, then the plan would  
24 have to change.

25 So I think it was in flux, but there was no  
26 question from my briefings by Mr. Kanellakos that there was some  
27 argument in the command structure as to, you know, what the  
28 right plan was.

1           At the end of the day, I believe they chose the  
2 right path because it solved the problem and it brought our  
3 residents back to some degree of peace and quiet.

4           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** No injuries or anything like  
5 that when the plan finally unrolled. I think I agree with you,  
6 Mayor Watson.

7           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, no deaths, no serious  
8 injuries, and given the fact the number of people that were  
9 involved and the anger level, I'm very grateful that the police  
10 did a very professional job ---

11          **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Yeah.

12          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- and a very -- you know,  
13 and I was like most other, I think, Canadians -- certainly  
14 Ottawans -- glued to the television watching this take place, as  
15 the officers were moving in from Rideau and Sussex, Coventry, as  
16 well as Wellington Street and the residential areas.

17          **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** I think everyone in downtown  
18 Ottawa is quite grateful to those police and their services.

19          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

20          **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Now, with respect to some of the  
21 concerns or disagreements of the OPS plans that you were  
22 hearing, there was some disagreement in the command structure or  
23 something like that; is that what you said you were hearing?

24          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. My understanding was that  
25 the people who were responsible for the plan, which were the  
26 three police forces under the jurisdiction of the OPS and Chief  
27 Sloly, there were disagreements. I don't know what the  
28 magnitude of the agreements -- disagreements were, nor should I

1 be meddling in the development of a plan, so ---

2 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** For sure.

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- this was information that  
4 was relayed to me from Steve Kannellakos, and as you pointed  
5 out, there was some concerns raised by both the premier and the  
6 federal minister.

7 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And you were aware, Mayor  
8 Watson, were you not, that there was -- we'll Chief Sloly no  
9 doubt was doing his best to serve the people of Ottawa that  
10 during his tenure, you were aware he was experiencing some  
11 difficulties with conflicts and friction in the ranks of the  
12 Ottawa Police?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I don't have any specific  
14 evidence of that. I think there were some rumblings and  
15 rumours, but I could not -- no one came to me directly to say  
16 there were concerns. I think any time there's a new chief  
17 that's brought in from outside, there's always some degree of  
18 animosity that people think it should be an internal candidate,  
19 and so on, and Chief Sloly was brought in really, as an agent of  
20 change. I know we'd been well served by Chief Bordeleau, but I  
21 think it was remarkable that we had, for the first time in our  
22 history, an African Canadian leader who had served the people of  
23 Toronto very well for over 30 years.

24 And I was very supportive of his hiring. As you  
25 know, I didn't sit on the Police Board at that time when he was  
26 hired, but when I was introduced to him when Councillor Deans  
27 brought him around before the announcement, I was impressed with  
28 his qualifications and his way of handling himself. And in

1 fact, I think before he moved into Ottawa, I had breakfast with  
2 him and just got to know him a little better.

3 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Just stepping back a bit about  
4 the information you were receiving from the provincial and  
5 federal levels about concerns with the OPS plans, we've heard  
6 from Mr. Arpin that neither he nor yourself shared that  
7 information with Councillor Deans, the Chair of the Board.

8 Can you tell us why you didn't share that  
9 information with Councillor Deans?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, these meetings with the  
11 premier and the prime minister were held as confidential  
12 meetings, and I didn't think it was appropriate to breach that  
13 confidentiality.

14 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** But the Ottawa Police Services  
15 Board, you're aware, they're responsible for the direction and  
16 for directing the chief and monitoring his performance? You're  
17 aware of that?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, but not directing  
19 operational matters. And what was being discussed by the prime  
20 minister and the premier and myself was resources to help him  
21 implement the plan and rid the streets of the occupied truckers.

22 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** So it was your concern with  
23 maintaining confidentiality with the prime minister and the  
24 premier? That's why you didn't want to share that information  
25 with the Chair of the Ottawa Police Services Board?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

27 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** You didn't think that that  
28 information might be helpful for the Board to know when they

1 were having their interactions with the chief?

2                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, because the concerns that  
3 had been raised by the premier and Ms. Jones were general in  
4 nature. There were no specific allegations or -- of wrongdoing  
5 on the part of the chief. The same with the Federal Minister  
6 Blair. I think Mr. Blair knew Chief Sloly, obviously, as the  
7 former Chief of Toronto Police himself, and he, like others, at  
8 the political level, those confidential meetings was expressing  
9 concern that the plan was not coming together as quickly as  
10 possible.

11                   And I was putting pressure on everyone to get  
12 moving on this, because on the one hand, I was being asked with  
13 the support of Councillor Deans to send the letter that we've  
14 shown the public today to the premier and the prime minister.

15                   And my obsession, really, was to get the  
16 commitment by those two orders of government to get more police  
17 officers because we knew full well with our contingent of OPS,  
18 we could not do the job that the public expected us to do, and  
19 that was to clean up what was a horrific experience for your  
20 clients and our citizens.

21                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Okay. You testified this  
22 morning, Mayor Watson, that -- words to the effect that from a  
23 leadership point of view, the more information you have to share  
24 with partners, the better. And it's important for everyone to  
25 be singing from the hymnbook, I think you said, or all on the  
26 same team.

27                   Following those comments, Mayor Watson, don't you  
28 think it would have been helpful for the Board to know that you

1 were hearing from different levels of government that there were  
2 concerns with the Ottawa Police operational plans?

3 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. Again, those meetings  
4 were held in confidence and I wanted to respect the  
5 confidentiality so that we could have these frank discussions.

6 With respect to the specifics of those meetings,  
7 there was nothing really that set off any kind of an alarm, from  
8 my perspective, that Chief Sloly was not capable and competent  
9 of putting together a plan and overseeing it.

10 With respect to internal divisions, that's  
11 something you can ask Councillor Deans, as she is the Chair, but  
12 I don't have any inside or outside knowledge of what was going  
13 on behind the scenes with that command team that were putting  
14 the plan together. I can speculate that obviously, once Chief  
15 Sloly left the OPS, it was literally a matter of, I believe, two  
16 days and the police action started. So one has to assume that  
17 the plan that he put in place, by and large, was the plan, and  
18 there may have been some tweaking by the new Interim Chief Bell,  
19 but I certainly give credit to Chief Sloly for bringing it to  
20 that stage, and Chief Bell deserves great credit for bringing it  
21 to the actual point where the police officers moved in swiftly,  
22 carefully, and succinctly to bring an end to what was a  
23 miserable experience for the residents and small businesses of  
24 both Centertown, Downtown, as well as the Byward Market ---

25 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Lowertown.

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- and Overbrook Forbes where  
27 the stadium, the baseball stadium is located.

28 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** I just want to ask you some

1 questions about the negotiations with the convoy organizers. I  
2 believe you testified, Mayor Watson, that the first you heard  
3 about potential contact was on February the 8th, that Mr.  
4 Kanellakos approached you and indicated that a police liaison  
5 team had suggested that it might be helpful if there were some  
6 discussions between the mayor and the convoy organizers; is that  
7 right?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

9 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And then after Mr. Kanellakos  
10 had some contact or had a meeting with some of them, he then  
11 reported back to you that the meetings had gone generally well;  
12 is that right?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, the meetings between?

14 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** The first meeting that Mr.  
15 Kanellakos had with the convoy organizers, their two counsel and  
16 Mr. Marazzo?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. My understanding from  
18 Mr. Kanellakos was that it was a respectful, positive, meeting.

19 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Right.

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** And they would keep the lines  
21 of communications open.

22 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And then it was approximately  
23 two days later, on February 10th, that you had your first  
24 conversation with Mr. French; is that right?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'm just checking the date  
26 here, and that's correct. Yes.

27 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Okay. And then that led to  
28 negotiations roughly over about two days that come up with those

1 two letters between yourself and Ms. Lich?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

3 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And you had a number of  
4 conversations with Mr. French; is that right?

5 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. No more than two, the  
6 first call, and I believe I had a second one, but I can't recall  
7 what the specifics was because I indicated to him at that first  
8 call that the primary contact he would have would be with Mr.  
9 Arpin and Mr. Kanellakos.

10 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And then Mr. Arpin and Mr.  
11 Kanellakos, they took over the communications with Mr. French in  
12 negotiating that deal with Ms. Lich and the other organizers?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, and I had no other, when  
14 the letter was signed, no other contact with Mr. French, but,  
15 you know, I can certainly say publicly, I appreciate the fact  
16 that he stuck his neck out. There was nothing in it for him,  
17 from what I could see. Lots of comments about Mr. French  
18 himself and, you know, his time with the Premier, but I found  
19 that he was acting in good faith, and that resulted in the  
20 letters, which resulted in taking some pressure, not all the  
21 pressure by any means, but some small pressure off that portion  
22 of the residential area, you know, down by the Garden of the  
23 Provinces.

24 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** In your two conversations with  
25 Mr. French, he indicated to you that he was aligned with the  
26 protesters, that he shared their point of view on many issues?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, who was that?

28 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Mr. French. He indicated to you



1 he was aligned ---

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, he ---

3 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** --- with the protesters?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- he didn't indicate that he  
5 was aligned. He indicated that he had contacts with some  
6 members of the trucking industry, but he didn't offer an opinion  
7 that he supported their grievances or anything like that to me  
8 in that phone call. It was simply that he had some kind of  
9 connections. I don't know whether he made those connections  
10 through his private sector life or through his time in  
11 provincial government, but it was very much along the lines that  
12 he saw what was happening, and he saw that it was getting worse,  
13 and he called me. I literally had not seen or heard from him I  
14 think since he left the Premier's office.

15 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** He didn't suggest to you that he  
16 saw the protesters as patriots or anything like that?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

18 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Okay. Now so then you hand over  
19 the matter, the file to Mr. Arpin to work out some kind of deal;  
20 is that right?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Correct, yes, with Mr.  
22 Kanellakos' help because he had met with others that were from  
23 that same orbit a couple of days or two days earlier.

24 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Right. And did you give any  
25 direction to Mr. Arpin to interface or work with the Ottawa  
26 Police in his negotiation?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I didn't give any specific  
28 directions to him, but certainly, the police were aware that we

1 had this contact because the police were the ones that asked Mr.  
2 Kanellakos to engage with representatives of the protest group,  
3 because as the liaison team mentioned, they were -- they no  
4 longer had any communication. Something went wrong where they  
5 stopped talked, so this group went in to see Mr. Kanellakos, and  
6 then two days later, we had the Dean French issue. So the  
7 police were involved, and both Chief Sloly and Deputy Chief Bell  
8 were aware that we had this call from Mr. French. And  
9 ultimately, they signed off on it. I think Chief Sloly wanted  
10 to make one change to the letter, but unfortunately, the letter  
11 had already gone out. And the police then, whether it was the  
12 Chief or the Deputy, then assigned a senior officer to go and  
13 help with the facilitation the following day to get the vehicles  
14 away from the residential area as much as possible.

15 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Right. So there's the initial  
16 contact on February the 8<sup>th</sup> through the PLT or the Police Liaison  
17 Team and ---

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

19 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** --- then the contact was -- with  
20 Mr. French is on the 10<sup>th</sup> and then the letters are worked out on  
21 the 12<sup>th</sup>, I think finally exchanged on the 13<sup>th</sup>.

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

23 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Between the 8<sup>th</sup> and the 12<sup>th</sup>, do  
24 you know when Chief Sloly and Deputy Chief Bell were informed  
25 that Mr. French was involved and you were working on  
26 negotiations ---

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I don't recall the exact  
28 date. It was obviously sometime between those two dates, but I

1 don't recall the specific date. I remember discussing it with  
2 Chief Bell -- or Deputy Chief Bell at the time in my boardroom  
3 and he had no problem with it. And that was, again, sometime  
4 between the 8<sup>th</sup> and the 12<sup>th</sup>. I can't recall the exact time. I  
5 don't have a record of that.

6 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** So Deputy Chief Bell was in your  
7 boardroom at City Hall and was talking about it with you?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, he was there for one of  
9 our regular briefings, and we raised it with him at that time.  
10 And I don't know if he knew about it at that time, but certainly  
11 he didn't express any opposition. He felt that if it helped get  
12 some of the pressure off, one of the things he pointed out was  
13 that it shrunk the footprint of the protest, which helped the  
14 police in the long term contain the situation when they finally  
15 went in that weekend.

16 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Did Mr. Arpin have experience in  
17 hostage negotiations or anything like that?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. You know, I don't ---

19 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Do you know what background  
20 experience he had to negotiate a deal like this?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, good will and common  
22 sense. You know, we were in a crisis, and we needed all hands  
23 on deck, and he's been my Chief of Staff for 12 years, excellent  
24 communicator, solid education, and Francophone, and I was -- I  
25 had no hesitation in asking him to do this. He was -- over 12  
26 years he was given a lot of different tasks and I had full  
27 confidence that he could negotiate this. He was dealing with  
28 another former Chief of Staff, namely Mr. French, so they had, I

1 suppose, some connectivity. But at the end of the day, I think  
2 what ended up happening was that we were able to get an  
3 agreement, we were able to get 40 big rigs, 60 smaller rigs out  
4 of there, total 102, 101, and it did shrink the footprint, as  
5 Deputy Chief Bell said, and it also brought a little bit of  
6 relief for those people who lived in those corridors on Kent and  
7 so on farther south down Bay Street.

8 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Mayor Watson, I just want to ask  
9 you just a little bit about your relationship with other City  
10 Councillors. You told us that every Councillor felt  
11 overwhelmed, and under siege, and, you know, was getting a  
12 barrage of emails from residents and so forth. But you'd agree  
13 with me, Mayor Watson, the City Councillors for Sommerset and  
14 Rideau Vanier would have, you know, really been experiencing it  
15 far more acutely than any other City Councillor; correct?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

17 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And ---

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Although in fairness,  
19 absolutely, they were the worst hit, but it had a ripple effect  
20 on the whole city because obviously, residents in Orleans work  
21 downtown and people downtown work in Kanata and so on. But no  
22 question, it was ---

23 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Yeah.

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- Sommerset and ---

25 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Yeah.

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- Rideau Vanier ---

27 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** People in Orleans weren't having

28 ---

1           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Overbrook-Forbes.

2           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** --- fireworks going off their  
3 windows and trucks outside their door ---

4           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, no.

5           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** --- correct?

6           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** But also ---

7           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Yeah, okay.

8           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- I think we have to include  
9 Councillor King's ward as well because the baseball stadium was  
10 there and that was turning into quite a circus as well with, you  
11 know, fires and so on.

12           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Sure. And you viewed or saw  
13 what Councillor McKenney was doing during the demonstrations,  
14 that they were out in the streets every day and getting out to  
15 see what's happening to their residents; you saw that?

16           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I saw a number of Tweets and  
17 video online, yes.

18           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Yeah, and you agree with me that  
19 was quite admirable of Councillor McKenney to be out there with  
20 the residents?

21           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, I think there was -- you  
22 know, I know Councillor Deans had expressed concern about having  
23 counterprotests because it took ---

24           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Right.

25           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** --- away from police  
26 resources, but I think, you know, both Councillor Fleury and  
27 Councillor McKenney did good work representing their  
28 constituents during a very difficult time.

1                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Is there any reason, Mayor  
2 Watson, that you didn't reach out personally to either  
3 Councillor McKenney or Councillor Fleury personally to offer  
4 them any kind of comfort or support about what they were going  
5 through during that difficult time?

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I went back and reviewed  
7 that I had at least two calls and one Zoom call with Councillor  
8 McKenney. I had two or three calls during the period with  
9 Councillor Fleury. And then post the event, I invited both  
10 Councillors to breakfast at a downtown restaurant to show our  
11 support for the downtown, along with Chief Bell to do a -- our  
12 own post-mortem on what went wrong and what went well. And then  
13 a few weeks later, I hosted a breakfast or a lunch in my office  
14 and invited Minister Marco Mendocino along with Councillor  
15 McKenney and Councillor Fleury and our first responders, the  
16 Chiefs of the different services to thank all of them for the  
17 work that they did, including the two Councillors.

18                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** But one on one calls, you didn't  
19 have one on one calls with those Councillors during the course  
20 of the demonstration; correct?

21                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, I did. I had at least  
22 two calls with each of them, and then I think at least one Zoom  
23 call with both of them.

24                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Okay. I guess they forgot that  
25 when they testified last week. You'd agree with ---

26                   **MS. ANNE TARDIF:** Sorry, I don't believe that --  
27 that's not what my notes of Councillor Fleury's evidence  
28 reflect.

1                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Okay. Mayor Watson, you would  
2 agree with me that there's some political disagreements in City  
3 Council?

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Every day.

5                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** Well, you've been a municipal  
6 politician for a long time, Mayor Watson. You agree with me  
7 that this last term has probably been a bit more bitter and  
8 hostile than ---

9                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I wouldn't use those  
10 words. I think it's a lot more challenging and lot more  
11 pressure filled. You know, when you take into account what this  
12 Council has had to deal with, and forget just the Council, the  
13 public. There were two tornadoes, there was a flood, there was  
14 the massive storm derecho -- I can't remember the name of it.  
15 There was COVID-19 that was with us for 2-and-a-half years, and  
16 there was the truck convoy occupation. So all of my colleagues  
17 and Council, myself included, were feeling the pressure of a  
18 very challenging time in the history of our city.

19                   You know, as I mentioned earlier, I was asked by  
20 some students that I spoke to at I believe Algonquin College the  
21 other day last week. They said, "What was the most stressful  
22 time as mayor this term?" And I think a lot of them were going  
23 to say, you know, the truck convoy. And I said, "Well,  
24 actually, not to diminish the truck convoy, but it was COVID.  
25 Eight hundred (800) people died as a result of COVID, thousands  
26 more were seriously impacted, people lost their jobs, their  
27 livelihood, and that was a project that or a challenge that  
28 every single citizen of the world had to face.

1           The truck convoy was a terrible experience, but  
2 it was for a set period of time, three weeks. It affected  
3 dramatically the people in the inner core, but it ended. We're  
4 still dealing with COVID and we're still losing people every  
5 day.

6           So from my perspective, I think that added a  
7 tremendous stress because people were calling and upset with  
8 vaccination policies and mask mandates and everything else, and  
9 all of that came to a boil, obviously, when we had to deal with  
10 the storm and then with the convoy.

11           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And so just a final question,  
12 Mayor. The city was in crisis. It was unprecedented.  
13 Residents and businesses were suffering. This was a time for  
14 the city to come together, a time to put aside political  
15 rivalries.

16           Mayor Watson, do you think you did that, you  
17 served your city by getting over political rivalries by bringing  
18 all city councillors together, whether it was Ms. Deans or  
19 Ms. McKenney or others whom you had disagreements, to lead the  
20 city through this unprecedented time?

21           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I think it was -- you  
22 know, it was Churchill I believe that once said, you know,  
23 parliament in his case was not a tea party. You know, people  
24 come to these seats after a hard-fought election, they have  
25 strong emotions, they have strong opinions on different issues,  
26 and there's often clashes. That's the joy, I suppose, of  
27 democracy, where you don't have everyone agreeing all the time  
28 with everyone else.



1           What our Council went through was horrific. What  
2 I tried to do was to provide as much information, do as much  
3 work as I could do with the federal and provincial contacts that  
4 I had made over the course of my public service career to bring  
5 realistic solutions to the problem so that we could give the  
6 city back to the people of Ottawa. And ultimately, we did do  
7 that.

8           It was not a error-free, problem-free situation,  
9 and even Council voted that we apologise to the public, which we  
10 did. Because we let down an awful lot of people in Ottawa with  
11 a situation that we had never seen before and there was no  
12 roadmap to guide us. And given the fact that no one lost their  
13 lives, no one was seriously injured, people were affected, but  
14 the police, I believe, should be commended.

15           And secondly, I think the Prime Minister did the  
16 right thing by bringing in the *Emergencies Act* because that  
17 solved our problem. It's easy to sit back and be a Monday  
18 morning quarterback, but the people who were suffering the most  
19 were the people of Ottawa, not the people of the West Coast or  
20 the East Coast.

21           And so I thanked those colleagues, all  
22 colleagues, particular the two that were affected the most, Ms.  
23 -- Catherine McKenney and Mathieu Fleury. But all members of  
24 Council were feeling the pressure because they were getting  
25 emails from around the world, you know, with some pretty vulgar  
26 foul language and lots of threats against individuals, myself  
27 included.

28           **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** I think that's all my time.

1 Thank you very much, Mayor Watson.

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you.

3 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you.

4 The next is the Ottawa Police Service.

5 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:**

6 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Good afternoon,

7 Mayor Watson. My name is David Migicovsky ---

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Hello.

9 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** --- and I am counsel for  
10 the Ottawa Police Service.

11 Mayor Watson, I understand it's not an uncommon  
12 experience for the budget for the police to be a hotly debated  
13 matter by Council?

14 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct. It's an  
15 understatement, but correct.

16 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And I know that for 2022  
17 budget year, which I guess was completed, that process, in  
18 November/December of 2021, the budget increase that Chief Sloly  
19 had requested was I believe a 2.86 percent increase from the  
20 previous year, and what the Ottawa Police Service Board approved  
21 was a 2 percent budget increase. Is that your memory?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I recollect that is in the  
23 ballpark. You probably have more specific figures. But there  
24 was also -- you had to include the assessment growth of the city  
25 as well, which was I believe about, I stand to be corrected,  
26 about 3 percent on top of that.

27 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so according to the  
28 media reports, that budget, once it had been approved by the

1 Ottawa Police Service Board, came before Council for a fairly  
2 contentious debate, and ultimately, Council did approve the  
3 2 percent increase?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. There was some members  
5 of Council that wished to be engaged with this defund the police  
6 process, but the majority of Council, myself included, did not  
7 support that, and we felt it was important to support the  
8 Chief's request. And also, you know, the increase also  
9 included, or also included assessment growth, which, I'll have  
10 to check back, but I think it was another 2 percent on top of  
11 that.

12 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And in fact, Chief Sloly  
13 had requested more from the Ottawa Police Service's Board, but  
14 they had not given him what he had been asking for; is that your  
15 memory?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I believe that's correct, yes.

17 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And I believe Chief Sloly  
18 was on record telling Council that there would be significant  
19 risks to policing. Do you recall that?

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** In fairness, I'm not trying to  
21 be glib with this, but almost every chief says that when they  
22 don't get 100 percent of their budget. So I think that's  
23 probably what he said.

24 And you know, our job as City Council is to  
25 basically vote up or down the budget. We don't get into the  
26 micromanagement because the *Act* says that we can't do that. But  
27 you know, we've -- I've been proud of the fact that we've been  
28 able to provide annual increases to the police for a number of

1 reasons, including the fact that our population is bigger, we  
2 have 2,600 kilometres of road to cover and patrol. It's a big  
3 task, and we felt, those of us who supported the police budget,  
4 felt that it was an appropriate amount, and it was accepted.

5 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And several councillors at  
6 the time in fact voted against the 2 percent increase saying it  
7 was too much; correct?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I believe that is correct,  
9 yes.

10 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And ultimately, what it  
11 took to resolve the protest in Ottawa was a massive amount of  
12 resources?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, are you now talking  
14 about the ---

15 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** The Freedom Convoy.

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, it did take a lot of  
17 resources, and as I pointed out, we have every intention of  
18 recouping those dollars based on the conversations I've had with  
19 other orders of government because it should not come out of the  
20 base budget of the Ottawa Police Service, which is always  
21 hovering around a surplus or deficit every year.

22 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And it took a massive, not  
23 only civilian members, but it took a massive number of police  
24 officers on the grounds; correct?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, under very difficult  
26 circumstance if you recall back. I recall very well the weather  
27 was miserable. The roads down in that area could not get plowed  
28 so they were almost impassable. It was -- you know, some

1 officers were working 12, 13 days in a row. You know, one of  
2 the reasons why the Chief was going out getting supplemental  
3 municipal services was to give his officers a day off to  
4 recharge their batteries.

5 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** A much needed day off ---

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

7 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** --- given what was going  
8 on on the ground; correct?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Absolutely. It was very  
10 stressful for them. You know, I saw a lot of news footage over  
11 the course of the time where the officers were spat upon and  
12 they were yelled at and screamed, and they kept their cool, and  
13 you know, for that we're grateful. There were some incidents  
14 where I felt, you know, the images of the police being buddy-  
15 buddy with someone, a protester was not appropriate, and my  
16 understanding was that the police reminded their officers first  
17 and foremost they're there to be neutral. And when they did  
18 their job they did an excellent job. And I have no problem  
19 defending the Ottawa Police Service and the actions that they  
20 took to bring this crisis to an end.

21 **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** And ultimately, you have no  
22 problem, I take it, in agreeing with me as well that it was  
23 brought to a successful resolution under chief -- Interim  
24 Chief Bell?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct, yes. And I  
26 think -- you know, as I mentioned, it was -- the funny thing was  
27 it was -- the Olympics were on and I think more people were  
28 watching this activity than the Olympics. Because it was so

1 gut-wrenching to see what was happening to our city for three  
2 weeks, and it was such a relief for everyone to see that this  
3 was coming to an end. And it was wrapped up roughly in three  
4 weeks.

5                   There were, you know, scattered groups here and  
6 there that lingered on. I remember walking up a couple of days  
7 after, just to go to the Rideau Centre, and you know, a number  
8 of people yelling at me "f'ing fag", and I knew these were still  
9 people that were from the protests, they had upside down Canada  
10 flags and so on. So police had to keep the presence in the  
11 neighborhood and in the downtown core because there were still  
12 people that wanted to do harm to our citizens as well as to our  
13 property, public and private.

14                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And, really, this was  
15 unprecedented in terms of your career in politics; is that fair?

16                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right. Nothing comes  
17 close to it. You know, I think back; my first month in office I  
18 was thrown into the ice storm. That was dramatic but it was not  
19 hurtful to people. It was difficult when people lost  
20 electricity and so on but this was something that affected  
21 thousands of people very personally and was unacceptable  
22 behaviour by fellow Canadians to come into someone else's  
23 neighbourhood in that selfish a fashion.

24                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And, in fact, you  
25 yourself, I believe, as well as Chief Sloly, received threats  
26 during the protest?

27                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, and I believe some  
28 members of Council did as well. And I received one -- I think

1 one, two, or three. A couple of people were charged and some  
2 guy from New Brunswick was coming down here with guns in his  
3 trunk to shoot me and he was arrested.

4 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And the police, obviously,  
5 took those seriously and took appropriate action?

6 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** They did, and our corporate  
7 security, the same, because, you know, people had been outside  
8 my house, not necessarily associated with the convoy but other  
9 groups protesting, so they installed a security system.

10 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Thank you very much. I  
11 have no additional questions. Thank you.

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you.

13 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you.

14 Now the Government of Canada.

15 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:**

16 **MR. BRENDAN VAN NIEJENHUIS:** Thank you, Mayor  
17 Watson. My name is Brendan van Niejenhuis and I'm one of the  
18 lawyers for the Government of Canada.

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Hello.

20 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** I wanted to start by  
21 asking you about some of your concerns that were expressed in  
22 your conversation of February the 3<sup>rd</sup> with Ministers Blair and  
23 Mendicino. Do you recall that first conversation with that  
24 group?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Let me just get my chronology  
26 here.

27 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Sure.

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, so that was with the

1 Deputy Minister, or was it -- what is it here?

2 **MR. ANNE TARDIF:** There's no indication in the  
3 City of Ottawa -- or the documents that have been produced to  
4 date that -- and counsel may have information but we haven't  
5 seen any indication that Minister Blair was on that call.

6 We don't object to my friend's question. He may  
7 very well have been, but if the Mayor is looking for it, I --  
8 that's probably why, counsel.

9 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** It's the February 3<sup>rd</sup>  
10 call, Mayor, and I'm sorry if I misspoke.

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Oh, sorry. Yeah, you said  
12 February 2<sup>nd</sup>, I think. So February 3<sup>rd</sup>, yes, the Mayor and the --  
13 no, sorry. Yeah, the tripartite meeting at 5:15, is that the  
14 one you're referring to?

15 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** I believe so. It's  
16 -- it isn't too material, at any rate. My point really is that,  
17 as early as the conversations you were having with the federal  
18 partners on February the 3<sup>rd</sup>, you were already, understandably,  
19 growing extremely anxious to secure more resources for the City  
20 of Ottawa, right?

21 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That is correct, yes.

22 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And you were getting  
23 engagement, certainly, at the political level from the  
24 ministers, initially, and later from the Prime Minister; right?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, can you repeat the  
26 question?

27 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** You were getting  
28 engagement on these issues ---



1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

2                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** --- initially from  
3 those ministers and, ultimately, from the Prime Minister as  
4 well; right?

5                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. No, we had no difficulty  
6 having calls returned by federal officials. It was quite a  
7 cooperative relationship.

8                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And at the political  
9 level, at any rate, you were getting the commitment to do what  
10 they could to assist you in getting boot on the ground; right?

11                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, in theory, yes, but  
12 before, you know, we could celebrate, we wanted to see the boots  
13 on the ground, so that took a longer period of time. But at the  
14 very beginning, they understood clearly -- both Minister Blair  
15 and Minister Mendicino, they understood that we needed help and  
16 they offered that assistance. We just wanted it faster.

17                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Yes, sure. And you  
18 certainly took them to be serious in their desire to get you  
19 that assistance, to the best of their ability, at the political  
20 level; right?

21                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct, yes.

22                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And the purpose of  
23 getting those boots on the ground -- and when we say "boots on  
24 the ground", what we mean in those conversations is RCMP  
25 officers working on Ottawa streets; right?

26                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Absolutely, yes.

27                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** The purpose of  
28 getting those officers working on the city streets was to

1 enforce the law; right?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct, and bring  
3 order to the downtown, and the Byward, Market and Coventry.

4 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And in your first  
5 call with the Prime Minister that my friend took you through  
6 earlier, you expressed some, I think, understandable frustration  
7 given the situation you were in with the difficulties in the  
8 pace of bureaucracy at times; right?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, I outlined to the Prime  
10 Minister that while we had a very positive relationship, his  
11 Ministers were doing good work -- I have to thank you to the  
12 local MPs, Mona Fortier and Yasir Naqvi, in particular, because  
13 their two ridings were the two risings most affected by the  
14 convoy -- Minister Fortier, Ottawa-Vanier, including, obviously,  
15 Vanier, the Market, Lowertown, Sandy Hill; and Member of  
16 Parliament Naqvi, Centretown and the Glebe.

17 So he -- the Prime Minister was empathetic and  
18 sympathetic to the fact that we needed help sooner than later  
19 and, you know, when we finally did get the help, it was exactly  
20 what we asked for. And it worked because we saw the result the  
21 following days, the Friday, Saturday, and Sunday where the whole  
22 operation was wrapped up quite successfully.

23 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** In the press of  
24 events, though, you were feeling a great deal of urgency and you  
25 weren't sure you were seeing enough urgency in terms of the  
26 implementation of these efforts; is that fair?

27 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, you know, the  
28 interesting thing is, of course, being the Nation's Capital, the

1 Prime Minister lives here, the MPs are here for their House  
2 sittings, and so on, and the senators are, so they were living  
3 and breathing what a lot of our residents were, although they  
4 had the luxury of leaving and not having to stay in the red  
5 zone. But there was -- at the initial stages, there didn't seem  
6 to be the sense of urgency on the part of the Provincial or  
7 Federal Government but I think when the Prime Minister got  
8 engaged and the Ministers suggested the tripartite table, they  
9 set up a structure that we could actually start making decisions  
10 and start seeing results. So I think the more calls we had,  
11 quite frankly, the better it was because I think they were tired  
12 of listening to me hound them for more resources more quickly.

13 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Sure. And at the  
14 same time, there's matters going on behind the scenes that --  
15 you know, that you may not be able to be aware of in detail and  
16 that they may not be able to be aware in all of the detail  
17 because they're operational in nature; right?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, and, you know, both the  
19 Premier and the Prime Minister indicated that, you know, I  
20 should continue to work with respective ministers, which we  
21 did. And also, our Chief, Chief Sloy at the time, obviously,  
22 was working the phones to ensure that Commissioner Lucki knew  
23 exactly what he needed. We followed that up with the letter by  
24 Councillor Deans and myself to the Premier and the Prime  
25 Minister and their respective ministers and we started to see  
26 some action. We saw, slowly, more RCMP officers coming in, more  
27 OPP. And then, when the plan was finalized and ready to go, we  
28 had the necessary resources of the 1800 in the city to bring an

1 end to this terrible situation.

2 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** You, I think very  
3 fairly, earlier this morning acknowledged that some of the  
4 delays are simply practical delays, particularly when you're  
5 dealing the National Police first, the RCMP. For example, you  
6 told us that you understood these officers might, in many cases,  
7 need to travel some distance to get to Ottawa; right?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, and there was -- there  
9 was a little of confusion in terms of at one point I was told  
10 that there was quite a backlog in getting RCMP Mounties sworn in  
11 as peace officers, I guess, for Ontario. That may have been a  
12 situation early on by, apparently, they started to do it in bulk  
13 and two sessions a day so it sped it because my understanding is  
14 that they would not have authority on City of Ottawa property if  
15 they weren't sworn in.

16 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Sure, and I'll come  
17 to that in a moment. But just, first, on some of the practical,  
18 there's an element of it that's just practical delay, right,  
19 where you're looking at travel, the need to check in to the  
20 hotel, the need to eat; these things take a bit of time  
21 depending upon where an officer is coming from, right?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, I think that's a  
23 legitimate issue. My point was, though, that if we'd started  
24 the process earlier and we didn't have this lag time, we may  
25 have been able to go in on the second week instead of the third  
26 week. But that's ---

27 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Sure, that's just  
28 common sense, right?

1                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Right.

2                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** If you start  
3 something earlier, you finish earlier. But the question is, you  
4 know, what's done as matters unfold. So -- and one of the  
5 things that would take a bit of time, too, then, once you're  
6 checked in, once you've had a meal, maybe gotten sleep and so  
7 forth, is to receive shifts in operational orders and be  
8 equipped to go out and start policing; right?

9                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right because the vast  
10 majority of these officers, maybe not so much for the RCMP who -  
11 - some may have been stationed over the years in Ottawa but most  
12 of those officers would not know where the police station was,  
13 for instance, from the Ottawa Police. So they had to go through  
14 some kind of an orientation to ensure that they knew what their  
15 instructions were, and, you know, lining up frequency on radios  
16 and all sorts of other things that professionals told me had to  
17 be done in order for the person to hit the ground running.

18                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Sure, and you need  
19 then to also ensure familiar -- you need to ensure, as you say,  
20 familiarity with the place that is being policed and also,  
21 that's part of the need to do things in a safe fashion; right?

22                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

23                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And you need a  
24 sufficient number of officers with clear roles and  
25 responsibilities to proceed with a significant public order, a  
26 crisis in an environment like this; right?

27                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

28                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And particularly in

1 a place like Rideau and Sussex, for example, where you'd been  
2 told about a real concern about a more dangerous element having  
3 taken hold; correct?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

5 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And that was also a  
6 top priority for the same reason in terms of the order of  
7 enforcement that you understood was likely to occur; right?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** So I don't quite understand  
9 your question.

10 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Rideau and Sussex  
11 was a priority for enforcement as the week of February 7<sup>th</sup>, for  
12 example ---

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. My understanding is from  
14 the documentation that Chief Sloly felt that was a higher  
15 priority because of the criminal element within that group of  
16 trucks and bikers and so on.

17 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Yes.

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That was taken care of, I  
19 believe, earlier than Wellington Street, but it was a relatively  
20 small group compared to the large number of trucks and people  
21 that were in the red zone.

22 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Sure, but because of  
23 that more dangerous element, at least as it was being reported  
24 to you, that scenario where you would need, again, to really  
25 ensure officer and protester safety?

26 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct. And also, the  
27 protection of private and public property, as you know, the  
28 Rideau Centre had been closed for something like two weeks,

1 losing, you know, a couple -- 2.1, I believe million dollars a  
2 day, so it was -- I stand to be corrected on that number, but it  
3 was a significant loss. And the restaurants across the way and  
4 the Chateau Laurier, all were being impacted where no one could  
5 even go near the ByWard Market, so those businesses were  
6 suffering greatly along with the people who live in that area.

7 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Okay. Now just  
8 coming back, you indicated the issue of the officers needing to  
9 be sworn in. And I want to ask you a few questions about that,  
10 Mayor Watson. Let me go back, first of all, to just, you know,  
11 reconfirm, the purpose of having these resources in place was to  
12 enforce the laws here; right?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right.

14 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And in order to do  
15 that, you need the law enforcement professionals, the peace  
16 officers who are going to be doing that job, they need to be  
17 here lawfully themselves; right?

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

19 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** They need to have  
20 the proper legal authority to be able to enforce before you can  
21 get underway with a very significant law enforcement operation;  
22 right?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, we estimated that to be  
24 1800.

25 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And if they did not  
26 have that legal authority, you might be in a situation where the  
27 operation itself might be called into question in terms of its  
28 lawfulness as well as any charges that might result?

1           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's very true.

2           **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** There might be a  
3 possibility of liability accruing to the City or indeed the RCMP  
4 or some -- or the individual officer if an officer wasn't  
5 lawfully in place at that point in time?

6           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's right. And our police  
7 service was well aware of that, and that's why obviously we  
8 followed strict rules to have them properly sworn in. And as I  
9 said, initially, I was told that that was slowing down the  
10 process, but then something happened, whether they added extra  
11 shifts, or extra staff, or did it in larger gatherings or  
12 groups, that that was covered off and they were now legal to  
13 operate in Ottawa.

14           **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Now that process of  
15 swearing in officers to be able to enforce laws within the local  
16 jurisdiction, that was also true of other municipal police  
17 officers too, right, such as those that came from London and  
18 Belleville and otherwise?

19           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I stand to be corrected, but I  
20 don't believe they needed to be sworn in because they were sworn  
21 in as officers in all of Ontario.

22           **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** With respect to  
23 municipal by-laws though.

24           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I'm not an expert on  
25 that, so you'll have to ask someone who is, but my understanding  
26 was that they did not need to swear in ---

27           **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Okay. And at any  
28 rate, it is not something that needed to be done, whichever of



1 us is right about that, and you may be. It was not something  
2 that needed to be done in the case of the Ontario Provincial  
3 Police, right, the swearing in process?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct. It's just the  
5 Mounties.

6 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Now could I ask if  
7 we could pull up OTT00006610?

8 You are, of course, at the Ottawa 7 Emergency  
9 Council meeting, Mayor?

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I was, yes, I was chairing it.

11 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And quite a number  
12 of motions were passed unsurprisingly with respect to actions  
13 the municipality should take in response to the convoy that had  
14 then been entrenched for just a little over a week?

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, there were many, many  
16 motions.

17 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** I'd like to just  
18 focus on a couple of them. The first is at page 10, begins at  
19 page 10. And this is a motion that your colleague Councillor  
20 Deans -- excuse me, it's the motion at the bottom of the page.  
21 It's a motion that we asked your colleagues Councillor McKenney  
22 and Councillor Fleury about last week, but it is a motion -- if  
23 you go over the -- to the top of page 11, you'll see that it's  
24 carried. And what it asks is that,

25 "...the Council [...] formally petition  
26 the Government of Canada to assume  
27 responsibility for public safety and  
28 security within the [...] Precinct and

1 to commit to an immediate and [...]   
2 increased level of support [...] to the   
3 Ottawa Police, the police force of   
4 jurisdiction, subject to the resolution   
5 of any jurisdictional discussions   
6 between the Ottawa Police Service and   
7 the RCMP."

8 Right?

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

10 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And that motion's   
11 carried, of course, unanimously I take it?

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** One descent by Councillor   
13 Chiarelli.

14 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Oh, excuse me, I   
15 missed that. It's right there in front of me. With the   
16 exception of Councillor Chiarelli that was passed.

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

18 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** I want to turn now   
19 if we can to a comment that Chief Sloly sent to you the next   
20 morning and that's at -- if we can pull up, please, OTT00005837?

21 You see this is an email from Chief Sloly to   
22 yourself and Chair Deans -- Councillor Deans copying a number of   
23 others from the Ottawa Police and the City Manager, et cetera.   
24 Do you see that?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, I think if you can push   
26 it up, so I can see the full email, that would be helpful.

27 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Of course. Do you   
28 mind pulling that down?

1                   And we'll take a moment to look at that, Mayor,  
2 but my question's going to be, first of all, is this is  
3 reference to the motion we just looked at?

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, it is.

5                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And I'm just going  
6 to direct you to the second paragraph there where Chief Sloly's  
7 indicating to you,

8                                    "In Ontario, policing is governed by  
9                                    the *Police Services Act*. In accordance  
10                                   with [section] 5[...] of [that] Act,  
11                                   the City [...] has discharged its  
12                                   responsibility to provide police  
13                                   services by establishing [its own]  
14                                   police force – the Ottawa Police  
15                                   Service."

16                   Right?

17                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

18                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And he indicates  
19 that,

20                                   "[Therefore,] Ottawa [...] is the sole  
21                                   police service of jurisdiction."

22                   But then he continues. He says,

23                                   "It is [also] important to note that  
24                                   the *Police Services Act* defines "police  
25                                   force" as either the [OPP] or a  
26                                   municipal police force."

27                   You see that?

28                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

1                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And that's  
2 consistent with your understanding of the -- that's the reason  
3 why OPP, for example, need not be sworn in?

4                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

5                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And when you compare  
6 the situation as you did this morning in Ottawa to the  
7 situations that were in place both in terms of enforcement  
8 efforts down the road, that were in place both in Windsor and in  
9 Coutts, you saw that those operations were able to move more  
10 quickly than you perceived they were in Ottawa; is that fair?

11                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes, granted the magnitude of  
12 protesters and occupiers was significantly larger in Ottawa than  
13 it was in Coutts or in Windsor, so I think we had a much more  
14 difficult situation. If you just saw aerial shots or drone  
15 shots of the crowds around Parliament Hill and the ByWard Market  
16 and the Cenotaph and so on, it was significantly larger than --  
17 you know, I -- looked like -- you know, in Coutts, there might  
18 have been, you know, 50 vehicles. Now for a small town and a  
19 small crossing, that's a big deal. I'm not diminishing that,  
20 but certainly just in sheer volume.

21                   And I think if I could just comment on this, I  
22 think what Councillor McKenney's motion was trying to get at was  
23 that there was a level of frustration that Ottawa Police were on  
24 Wellington Street trying to keep the peace and deal with issues  
25 of jerry cans coming and so on. And it then stretched our  
26 officers and didn't give them the ability to go in and patrol  
27 the residential neighbourhoods, which was Councillor McKenney's  
28 true -- you know, Councillor McKenney's desire to represent her

1 constituents and protect those constituents, similar to  
2 Councillor Fleury. We had, you know, the tail end of the  
3 Parliamentary Precinct is in his riding by just the other side  
4 of the Cenotaph. So, you know, I think it was an attempt at the  
5 motion to ensure that we had some ability to have the Mounties  
6 come in and take jurisdiction on Wellington, and then --  
7 Wellington Street, and then it would free up those Ottawa police  
8 officers to go deeper into the community neighbourhood. So the  
9 Chief came back and obviously pointed out that this was not  
10 legally possible to do.

11                   And then there was the other issue that we really  
12 haven't talked about, I think we talked about -- one other of  
13 the lawyers asked me about was the issue of what do we do with  
14 Wellington Street on a go-forward basis in terms of access and  
15 so on.

16                   So that's one discussion, and this is another  
17 discussion. But I -- it's clear that Chief Sloly was not  
18 consulted on this or otherwise I think he would have told the  
19 mover of the motion that what they are proposing is not legal.

20                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Well, I think -- and  
21 the point he is making to your point, I think really, is that  
22 there's both legal obstacles and there is practical obstacles --  
23 -

24                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

25                   **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** --- to getting this  
26 to move forward as quickly as everyone wanted; right?

27                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. I think, you know,  
28 there was the sense that "Well, why don't we just take the

1 Mounties and maybe PPS and put them on the street and then move  
2 everyone south?" And I think, you know, Chief Sloly was trying  
3 to be respectful and not embarrass the Councillor, but I think  
4 he felt an obligation to inform them of the law.

5 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Surely. Surely.  
6 This is not a situation like it was in Coutts, where the RCMP  
7 was already the police force of local jurisdiction and didn't  
8 have to worry about any of those legal obstacles.

9 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. And certainly, I knew  
10 the desire to get greater presence in the Centre Town  
11 residential communities, and as a result, I certainly raised it  
12 with Chief Sloly on at least two occasions, that you needed to  
13 see a large presence. We keep announcing we're protecting the  
14 central core, you needed to see a large presence, not one or two  
15 officers walking down Kent Street or O'Connor, it had to be  
16 visible. And you know, again, we couldn't always do that until  
17 we had more police officers to share the burden.

18 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Now, you told us  
19 this morning, I believe, that before the 14th of February, when  
20 the *Emergencies Act* was invoked, that you in fact were not  
21 familiar with the particular authority that existed under that  
22 Act; is that right?

23 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah, just the one memo that  
24 we showed earlier that showed that that was one of the options,  
25 I think they listed five or six options. It was very brief, it  
26 didn't give any details.

27 But when it was introduced by the federal  
28 government, and to be very clear, I've been consistent on this

1 since Day 1, we needed that Act. And it's fine for someone out,  
2 you know, West or down East to say, "Well, you know, it was  
3 overkill." No, we needed that Act. We needed to give our  
4 police resources the tools they could use, such as tow trucks,  
5 and so on, to actually solve the problem or this thing would've  
6 gone on for many, many more days, if not weeks.

7 So I was not familiar with it, but when it was  
8 introduced our legal staff provided me with a copy of it, and  
9 highlighted the points that we felt we could use to our  
10 advantage to clear up this terrible situation.

11 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** And one of the  
12 points that you've raised in that regard is the important point  
13 that the towing issue...

14 And I'm sorry, Mr. Commissioner, I just have to  
15 finish this one question.

16 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay.

17 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** But the second  
18 aspect of it, Mayor, am I right was that the regulations passed  
19 under that Act permitted RCMP officers, regardless of the  
20 niceties of being sworn in, to enforce provincial and municipal  
21 laws in the streets of Ottawa? Is that fair?

22 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. That was something that  
23 was brought to my attention. I had heard a contrary view to  
24 that, but I stand to be corrected, but my understanding was that  
25 it would allow them without going through the whole swearing in  
26 process to be automatically in essence deputised to enforce  
27 Ottawa by-laws and Ontario laws.

28 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** That enabled the

1 clearing operation to occur later in the week of February 14th?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

3 **MR. BRENDAN van NIEJENHUIS:** Thank you,  
4 Mr. Commissioner, for your indulgence. Those are my questions.

5 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you.

6 Okay, next we have the Democracy Fund.

7 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Good afternoon. Can you hear  
8 me? I'm sorry, can you hear me?

9 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Yes, we can. Go ahead.

10 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Thank you.

11 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. ALAN HONNER:**

12 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Good afternoon, Mayor Sloly  
13 [*sic*]. My name's Alan Honner. I'm appearing remotely today.  
14 I'm a lawyer with the Democracy Fund.

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'm Jim Watson, I'm not the  
16 Chief.

17 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Oh, pardon me.

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I think you said Mayor Sloly.

19 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Oh, I apologise, Mayor Watson.

20 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** All right. No problem.

21 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** You told us today that Toronto  
22 mayor, John Tory, gave you some phone numbers for some tow  
23 trucks?

24 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Names and phone numbers;  
25 correct.

26 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** And you passed those on to  
27 Steve Kanellakos and the City Staff?

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.



1           **MR. ALAN HONNER:** And did you ever follow up with  
2 anyone after sharing those phone numbers?

3           **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, because once the *Emergency*  
4 *Act* was proclaimed or introduced, I actually saw the two trucks  
5 on Laurier Avenue lined up for quite some distance. So there  
6 was no need to follow up because they'd obviously done the work  
7 that we had asked them to do, was to find trucks.

8           **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Do you recall when you gave  
9 those phone numbers to Steve Kanellakos and City Staff?

10          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you'd have to go back  
11 and check my text messages, which I believe are on public  
12 record, and the phone numbers, and the names and the texts from  
13 John Tory were on that. And it was basically I would think an  
14 hour or so after receiving them I would've walked next door or  
15 had someone walk next door and give them to Steve Kanellakos. I  
16 don't know ---

17          **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Let me interrupt you. I'm just  
18 asking you if you recall when you shared those phone numbers.  
19 What is the date? Do you know?

20          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I can't remember. It was  
21 probably the day or the day after I received the information  
22 from Mayor Tory.

23          **MR. ALAN HONNER:** And how many days was that  
24 before the invocation of the *Emergency Act*?

25          **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, as I said, I don't  
26 recall the actual date I met or I received from Mr. Tory. So if  
27 you can give me that date then I work my way back.

28          **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Okay. So you didn't follow up,

1 and you don't know how many days passed between those messages  
2 being passed on and the invocation of the *Emergencies Act*.  
3 Thank you.

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I -- well, no, I just --  
5 you asked me a question, I'm going to answer it. If I had the  
6 date, which I have back in my office, I can tell you the date  
7 that John Tory sent me the text with the names and numbers of  
8 the towing companies. And then I would've referred those,  
9 either that day or the next day, to Mr. Kanellakos.

10 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** But you don't have the dates?  
11 You don't know?

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I have them back at my  
13 office. I was told I couldn't bring anything other than the  
14 chronology.

15 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** You can't tell us now? Mayor -  
16 --

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, if I can, I don't think  
18 I'm going to be allowed to leave until I get my document in my  
19 office, but I can certainly email it to you if you'd like to  
20 know. But ---

21 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** That's fine. I'll move on,  
22 Mayor.

23 Mayor, you did not speak to Premier Ford or to  
24 Sylvia Jones about the tow trucks?

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'm sorry?

26 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** You never spoke to Premier Ford  
27 or Sylvia Jones about tow trucks; is that right?

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I would've had -- in my

1 first call with Premier Ford, I indicated to him that we were at  
2 a disadvantage because we just didn't have -- we had two OC  
3 Transpo trucks and we couldn't even guarantee that they would  
4 cooperate. So that was a problem we had.

5                   And I can't recall if I told him I was contacting  
6 John Tory, but certainly the reason I contacted John Tory was  
7 because I saw the number of tow trucks that he was able to  
8 mobilise in Toronto, after learning from our example a week or  
9 so after, and I wanted to know if he had any TTC or City of  
10 Toronto, and he said they had these private companies that came  
11 out and they were the ones that -- whose numbers he gave me via  
12 text message.

13                   **MR. ALAN HONNER:** You had two telephone calls  
14 with Premier Ford?

15                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Two or three.

16                   **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Mayor Watson, do you know --  
17 you would agree with me that one of the biggest issues for the  
18 City was the lack of ability to move the trucks?

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I'm sorry, I didn't hear the  
20 last part.

21                   **MR. ALAN HONNER:** One of the issue for the City  
22 was the lack of the ability to move these trucks?

23                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

24                   **MR. ALAN HONNER:** And trucks, either they had to  
25 be towed or they had to be moved by somebody, with keys; is that  
26 right?

27                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, they had -- yeah,  
28 someone would have to drive them out or they would have to be

1 hooked up to a tow truck and lifted out. And that's what  
2 happened with those that refused to leave and they were brought  
3 to a compound, similar to what ---

4 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** And do you know if ---

5 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, similar to ---

6 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Go ahead.

7 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Similar to, you know, if  
8 someone's parking in a no stopping zone, we have the ability  
9 with city tow trucks to tow them, but those are for cars, not  
10 18-wheelers.

11 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Do you know if financial  
12 incentives were offered to reluctant two truck drivers?

13 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Not that I'm aware of, no.

14 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** If those incentives were to be  
15 made, who would make them, the City or the police?

16 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Good question. I don't know  
17 legally or logistically who would make it, but it's -- the pot  
18 of money comes from the same, it's the taxpayer. So whether  
19 it's the City budget or the police budget, it's one and the  
20 same.

21 I was asked the question with respect to the  
22 procurement, and again, I don't know whether it was the police,  
23 OPS, or City of Ottawa that procured it. Mr. Kanellakos could  
24 certainly clarify that.

25 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** I'm going to just switch  
26 topics, Mayor. I understand that someone made a death threat  
27 against you, and I'm sorry to hear that. The person was  
28 arrested.

1                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Can I just interrupt  
2 briefly? You're going to have to wrap up quickly.

3                   **MR. ALAN HONNER:** That is fine. Thank you,  
4 Commissioner.

5                   In that case, Mayor Watson, let me just ask you,  
6 you told us earlier today where evidence came out that these  
7 protestors, they were nasty, they were hateful, and they were  
8 vulgar; is that right?

9                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

10                  **MR. ALAN HONNER:** And you said that you saw -- or  
11 you said that they had ripped masks off of people?

12                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes.

13                  **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Did you actually see that?

14                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I saw it reported in the  
15 media.

16                  **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Okay. And I think you also  
17 said that certain people were attacked; is that right?

18                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I didn't say that, no. I said  
19 that I had death threats, but I wasn't physically attacked.

20                  **MR. ALAN HONNER:** No, I didn't say that you were  
21 attacked, but you said that these protestors were attacking  
22 people. Did you not say that?

23                  **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. They were disrupting  
24 people's lives, that's for sure, and they refused on at least  
25 three occasions that I'm aware of that they refused to adhere to  
26 the provincial mandate of wearing a mask when going into a shop  
27 or a restaurant.

28                  **MR. ALAN HONNER:** So you're not aware of any

1 incidents of physical violence from the protestors?

2 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, you'd have to ask the  
3 police. I know they arrested a couple of hundred people and  
4 charged a couple of hundred people. I don't know what the  
5 charges were, so I'm not privy to that information.

6 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** According to your knowledge,  
7 you don't know of any?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sorry, I don't know of any?

9 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** Of any physical attacks.

10 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Not to my own personal  
11 knowledge, no.

12 **MR. ALAN HONNER:** All right. Thank you. Those  
13 are my questions.

14 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you. Next I'll call  
15 on the CCF.

16 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:**

17 **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Thank you. Mayor Watson,  
18 can you hear me?

19 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I can now, yes.

20 **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Good afternoon. My name is  
21 Sujit Choudhry. I'm counsel for the CCF.

22 We just have a few minutes, and I know it's been  
23 a long day for you, so I have a number of quick factual  
24 questions I hope you can answer.

25 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Sure.

26 **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** So did you ever request  
27 Prime Minister Trudeau to invoke the *Emergencies Act*?

28 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No, I didn't.

1                   **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Did you ever request  
2 Minister Mendicino to invoke the *Emergencies Act*?

3                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

4                   **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Did you request Minister  
5 Blair to invoke the *Emergencies Act*?

6                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. I can save you. I didn't  
7 ask anyone to invoke the *Emergencies Act*, because at the time, I  
8 did not know what was contained in the *Emergencies Act*.

9                   **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** At the time, were you  
10 familiar with what was contained in Ontario's *Emergency  
11 Management and Civil Protection Act*?

12                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I was given a copy of it and I  
13 read it, but I can't recall the specifics of it at this point.  
14 But I was certainly shown it and was -- a copy of the  
15 documentation was sent to my office from the provincial  
16 government.

17                   **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Did you ever discuss the  
18 Act? Pardon me, sir.

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yeah. No, I -- with the  
20 premier?

21                   **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Yeah, or with the Solicitor  
22 General.

23                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No.

24                   **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** So you never requested that  
25 the premier declare an emergency under that Act?

26                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** No. My preoccupation with the  
27 premier was getting resources, namely, police resources, and  
28 compensation for businesses and individuals that were affected

1 negatively as a result of the occupation. Those were the two  
2 areas that I spent most of my time with the premier. And to his  
3 credit, he delivered, along with the prime minister, funding for  
4 compensation for the small businesses in those zones that were  
5 adversely affected.

6 **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** So Mayor Watson, are you  
7 aware that under that law, once the premier declares an  
8 emergency, the premier can issue an order to regulate or  
9 prohibit travel or movement to, from, or within any specified  
10 area?

11 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Well, I'm at a disadvantage  
12 because I don't have a copy of it, but if you're telling me  
13 that's the Act, I have no reason to not believe you.

14 **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Or that the premier can  
15 issue an order to evacuate individuals or remove personal  
16 property from any specified area?

17 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Again, I'm going to take you  
18 at your word that that is the case, but I don't have a copy of  
19 the Act or the proclamation in front of me, but I did read it  
20 when it did come in several months ago.

21 **MR. SUJIT CHOUDHRY:** Okay. Good. Mayor Watson,  
22 those conclude my questions.

23 Commissioner, thank you very much.

24 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you. Okay. Thank  
25 you.

26 I'd like to call on now the City of Ottawa.

27 **MS. ANNE TARDIF:** This appears to be the inherent  
28 risk in going last, but we have no questions.



1                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay.

2                   **MS. ANNE TARDIF:** Thank you.

3                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you.

4                   Mayor Watson, if I could just ask you on one  
5 subject, you mentioned at one point that the -- when you were  
6 having discussions with respect to the federal government, and I  
7 think you mentioned something about you couldn't go to the  
8 provincial government and berate them unless the federal  
9 government came across first. And you also said at one point  
10 the feds needed to do their duty, and that was with respect to  
11 policing.

12                   How do you see the federal role? Do they have an  
13 equal obligation, in your view, for the policing with the  
14 province, they're equally responsible, or do you see it  
15 differently? I'm just trying to understand, let's just say,  
16 because you were in the province before and you're now with the  
17 City.

18                   So I'm trying to understand that relationship.

19                   **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** I think that's a good point,  
20 Commissioner, in the sense that Ottawa -- I'm not trying to be a  
21 braggart about Ottawa; I love the city I live in -- but we are a  
22 little different than most other cities because we're the  
23 Nation's Capital in addition to being a municipal entity under  
24 the *Municipal Act* of the Province of Ontario. And we have a  
25 large presence of government buildings and significant important  
26 buildings, whether it's the Supreme Court or the Parliament  
27 Buildings. And there is -- the mandate objectors were primarily  
28 focusing on, as I understand it, the federal mandate to cross

1 borders and wear masks in planes, and so on.

2                   And we were caught a little bit in the middle, so  
3 I was equally frustrated by both orders of government, and I  
4 ended up, as you saw during the number of meetings and Zoom  
5 calls and so on, my constant prodding to get them to take this  
6 situation to a more urgent level.

7                   And so well, if we were another city that didn't  
8 have the large federal government presence, everything from the  
9 National Cenotaph to the Tomb of the Unknown Soldier to the  
10 Ambassador core, I think your point would be well, you're no  
11 different than a regular city under the *Municipal Act*. I think  
12 we have that special responsibility as the Nation's Capital to  
13 ensure that when people come here, they come here feeling safe  
14 and secure and proud of their Nation's Capital.

15                   And I just wanted to get across to both orders of  
16 government that we could not do this on our own. We were --  
17 literally, our back was against the wall. It was a very  
18 frustrating experience. But -- you know, and I've been critical  
19 of both orders of government, but I do have to say, if you allow  
20 me, I appreciate -- yesterday, I was with the prime minister and  
21 the premier at an announcement, and the premier was asked if he  
22 supported the *Emergencies Act*, and he said he'd sit shoulder to  
23 shoulder with the prime minister. There was that unanimity,  
24 myself as mayor, the premier, and the prime minister. All were  
25 at wits' end as to how to end this peacefully without any harm  
26 to citizens or protestors. And the end result, notwithstanding  
27 a very miserable experience for people who lived here during  
28 that three weeks of hell, the police did an excellent job

1 getting the situation resolved. But we now have to remain  
2 vigilant because this thing can pop up at any time.

3 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Yeah. I guess my question  
4 was, you said the feds need to do their duty, and my question  
5 is really, do you see the federal government and the province  
6 having equal responsibility for policing in this area? Do you  
7 see that?

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Yes. Yes, for the -- for a  
9 number of reasons, but I think it was a joint responsibility  
10 because we needed all hands on deck and we went farther than  
11 just the provincial police and the federal police. We went and  
12 reached out to municipal police forces across the country that  
13 brought resources into the city to help us as well.

14 So the answer to your question is yes.

15 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you. And thank you  
16 for the time you took to come here. And good luck on your last  
17 stage in a very distinguished career.

18 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you very much, sir.

19 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** So now, while Mayor Watson  
20 leaves, I believe we're going to be filing some documents.

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Sorry, before we do that  
22 ---

23 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Oh, sorry. Oh, I forgot.  
24 Mayor Watson, there is a possibility of re-examination. I'm  
25 sorry.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yes. It's not actual re-  
27 examination but I have been asked to just reference the document  
28 that Mayor Watson has in front of me by -- in front of him,

1 rather, by Doc ID so that it can be clear for the record. And  
2 the document is the timeline of events submitted by the City of  
3 Ottawa in its Institutional Report; correct?

4 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** That's correct.

5 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And the reference  
6 for that is OTT.IR.000002, maybe six zeros but "2" is the last  
7 number. So that's just for the record, thank you.

8 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Would you like your -- should  
9 I give this to someone?

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** No, you can keep that,  
11 thanks.

12 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Okay.

13 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay, thank you, Mayor  
14 Watson.

15 **MAYOR JIM WATSON:** Thank you, sir.

16 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** So now we're going to just  
17 -- before we go to the next witness, we're going to file some  
18 documents, which is going to be a weekly event.

19 **MR. JOHN MATHER:** Thank you, Mr. Commissioner.  
20 Good afternoon, everyone. My name is John Mather. I'm one of  
21 the Commission counsel. As the Commissioner indicated, we are  
22 now going to enter into evidence a number of documents, and this  
23 is something that we expect that Commission counsel will do  
24 every week.

25 To provide some context to the public, the  
26 Commission has received more than 60,000 documents as part of  
27 its investigative process. Commission counsel have identified,  
28 and continue to identify, documents that are relevant to the

1 Commission's mandate. Many of these documents will be entered  
2 into evidence as you've already seen through the examination of  
3 witnesses. They may also be entered into evidence through  
4 reports that are filed by the Commission or by institutions that  
5 have an interest in the Commission's proceedings.

6           Given the Commission's timelines, however, we are  
7 not able to introduce and material documents in these manners,  
8 and some of these documents, then, will just be entered through  
9 this process. These are documents such as affidavits the  
10 Commission has received, meeting minutes, situational reports,  
11 other standard records and correspondence.

12           On a weekly basis, Commission counsel advised the  
13 parties about the documents that they intend to admit into  
14 evidence the next week. These are documents that the  
15 Commissioner may refer to or rely on his final report and, for  
16 this reason, the parties are given an opportunity to object to  
17 the admission of any of the documents before they are admitted.

18           Today, we are entering the first batch of these  
19 documents. There are 447 documents in total. They include, by  
20 way of example, City Bylaws for the City of Ottawa, City Council  
21 Motions, Minutes of the City of Ottawa and the Ottawa Police  
22 Services Board, and Letters of Request for Assistance relating  
23 to the City.

24           As noted, these are documents that the parties  
25 have had the opportunity to review and advise whether or not  
26 they have an objection and we are admitting those documents over  
27 which there was no objection. These documents will be posted to  
28 the Commission's website in the coming days and again, as I

1 noted, this will become a regular part of these proceedings.

2 Thank you, Mr. Commissioner.

3 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you.

4 Now, next we're -- we have a further witness, Mr.  
5 Rodriguez? And perhaps what we can do is start that evidence  
6 and maybe a break in, say, about somewhere around four o'clock,  
7 if that's agreeable.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Of course. For the  
9 record, Natalia Rodriguez, Senior Commissioner Counsel. And the  
10 Commission would like to call its next witness, Kim Ayotte.

11 **THE REGISTRAR:** Will you swear on a religious  
12 document or do you wish to affirm?

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I prefer to swear on the Bible,  
14 please.

15 **--- MR. KIM AYOTTE, SWORN**

16 **--- EXAMINATION IN-CHIEF BY MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:**

17 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Good afternoon, Mr.  
18 Ayotte.

19 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Good afternoon.

20 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Nice to see you again.

21 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Very nice to see you, thank you.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** You had an interview with  
23 Commission counsel on August 8, 2022; do you recall that?

24 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I do.

25 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And have you had a chance  
26 to review the interview summary that was generated from that  
27 interview?

28 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I have.

1           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And, at this time, do you  
2 have any corrections to make to that summary?

3           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I do not.

4           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay, so we will not  
5 proceed to enter that into evidence as WTS20, and I'm just going  
6 to pull it up. And this is your witness summary, correct?

7           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That is correct.

8           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay, excellent. Thank  
9 you.

10           I want to cover a few short areas with you just  
11 to maybe clarify a few issues that have come up in the last few  
12 days. You were not originally intended to testify and some  
13 issues have come up that we think you might be able to clarify  
14 for use. The first area is with respect to the issuance of  
15 permits; can you confirm whether any permits were ever sought or  
16 issued for this protest?

17           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I'm not aware of any permits  
18 being sought and I know that none were issued.

19           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Now, there was  
20 some suggestion, I believe, that some -- that a permit was  
21 granted for some Porta-potties; do you know anything about that?

22           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** There were no permits granted  
23 for Porta-potties for the City of Ottawa. I personally  
24 authorized the use of some Porta-potties at the early stages of  
25 the protest.

26           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay, but that was not in  
27 response to a permit request, was it?

28           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct; it was not in

1 response to a permit request.

2 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And this was just  
3 your own -- your own incentive?

4 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

5 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay, thank you. I want  
6 to talk a little bit about Bylaw and Fire Services and your role  
7 as the -- you're the General Manager of the Emergency and  
8 Protective Services, correct?

9 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, that's correct.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so Bylaw Services  
11 reports in you; is that right?

12 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, they do, through a  
13 Director, Roger Chapman.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And is that the  
15 same for Fire Services?

16 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, through the Fire Chief,  
17 Paul Hutt.

18 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so I want to  
19 understand a little bit more the relationship between Bylaw and  
20 Fire, on the one hand -- and Fire Services -- and OPS in the --  
21 over the course of these events. And "these events", obviously  
22 we're talking about the convoy protest in Ottawa and January and  
23 February of this year. And I want take you, just to refresh  
24 your memory and provide some context, to OTT2120, so 2-1-2-0.  
25 And the document is entitled "Media Availability, January 31<sup>st</sup>,  
26 2022" and you're the custodian of this document. It was brought  
27 to us by the City of Ottawa. It was produced by the City of  
28 Ottawa and you were listed as the custodian. Did you author



1 this document?

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I did not. This would -- this  
3 was authored by our Public Information and Media Relations  
4 Department; however, we do provide input into it. And this is a  
5 document that's prepared for me for media releases or for media  
6 events where I may get asked questions in certain areas, and  
7 these are the messages and responses to some of those areas.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And you would have  
9 reviewed this document before any key messages were delivered to  
10 the public based on this, right?

11 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so, if we look at the  
13 fifth bullet point -- so there's a few questions there. Yes.  
14 So it says:

15 "What was Bylaw's role this weekend?"

16 And by "this weekend", it means the first weekend  
17 of the convoy since this is dated January 31<sup>st</sup>. And it says:

18 "How did they support Ottawa Police and  
19 what kind of infractions were  
20 incurred?"

21 And then it says:

22 "Bylaw and Regulatory Services' role is  
23 to support the lead enforcement agency,  
24 Ottawa Police, to keep demonstrators  
25 peaceful by assisting with parking  
26 control and other issues as requested  
27 by the City of Ottawa." (As read).

28 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, "demonstrations peaceful",

1 yes.

2 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** "Demonstrations", yes,  
3 thank you. So can you explain what Bylaw's role was in that  
4 weekend, meaning, did it have the role of enforcing, as  
5 requested, or could it enforce on its own initiative?

6 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** So in Ottawa, we work under an  
7 Incident Management System, which is document also recognized by  
8 the Province of Ontario with regards to any type of incident or  
9 any type of event that we'd participate in.

10 Through that system, we identify incident  
11 commanders or agencies that have jurisdiction and agencies that  
12 play support roles. And in this particular case, as it was a  
13 protest or demonstration, it fell under the authority, the sole  
14 authority, quite frankly, of the Ottawa Police Service and we  
15 were playing a support role. So we would assist, or we would  
16 attend and do By-law enforcement; however, we would always  
17 report to police with regards to what we were seeing and if  
18 there were any potential threats towards our officers with  
19 regards to, you know, violence or anything of that nature, then  
20 we would certainly back off and ask for police support to go in.  
21 So initially, that was the mode of operation. We would report  
22 to police, and we would allow By-law officers to issue tickets.  
23 Our primary purpose was to maintain the emergency routes on the  
24 first weekend to ensure that vehicles -- the emergency vehicles  
25 such as firetrucks and paramedic vehicles, et cetera, police  
26 vehicles can actually make their way around the city as all of  
27 those things were preplanned prior to the demonstration to look  
28 at every risk and every building, to identify how we would

1 respond should there be an incident at any one particular  
2 building.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Now did you participate  
4 in the update that Chief Sloly gave the briefing on January 26<sup>th</sup>  
5 with respect to what to expect when the convoy arrived? I  
6 believe the mayor was involved and Steve Kanellakos. Were you  
7 there as well?

8 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I was.

9 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And in that  
10 briefing or anytime before or after, was it suggested to you  
11 that By-law would not be issuing tickets and towing on that  
12 first weekend?

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No, what happened is on the 29<sup>th</sup>,  
14 which I believe is a Saturday, we received information through  
15 the EOC, through our Emergency Operations Centre, that By-law  
16 had encountered some difficulties in the field, and that now the  
17 police have established a red zone and By-law was to not issue  
18 tickets in that red zone unless it was approved or through the  
19 NCRCC, the National Capital Regional Command Centre, and that  
20 By-law was escorted into that zone, and that was on Saturday the  
21 29<sup>th</sup>.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So prior to the 29<sup>th</sup>, was  
23 By-law exercising its authority to issue tickets and to tow  
24 independently?

25 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, it was, with the  
26 understanding that any single point of contact could cause a  
27 potential serious incident or riot, and that was something we  
28 heard regularly from the police, so we were very cautious on

1 that front, and we advised our officers to be very careful not  
2 to be that point of contact that could initiate a riot. And as  
3 a result of that, we were asking them to be very careful, and if  
4 they were fearful for their safety, that they should, you know,  
5 back off and seek police support before issuing any infractions.

6 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So on Friday the  
7 27<sup>th</sup> when they started to arrive, Saturday the 28<sup>th</sup>, By-law was  
8 functioning as it would normally at any regular day, issuing  
9 tickets and enforcing as it normally would?

10 **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Sorry, Counsel, just for  
11 clarity, Saturday is the 29<sup>th</sup>. I just don't want the witness to  
12 be confused.

13 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Thank you. Sorry,  
14 my apologies. I keep thinking that Saturday was the -- okay.  
15 Got you.

16 Sorry, so Friday the 28<sup>th</sup> and Saturday the 29<sup>th</sup>.  
17 So up until that point on the Saturday, on the 28<sup>th</sup>, everything  
18 was -- By-law was acting as it normally would and on the 29<sup>th</sup>,  
19 something occurred for that to change.

20 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes. What we mean by By-law  
21 acting as it normally would, again, as a support function to the  
22 police. It's tantamount to if we have a major house fire, fire  
23 is in charge, and they're incident command, and then the police  
24 come up, and they don't tell police what to do, but the police  
25 support the fire operation. Actually, a better example would be  
26 if there was a shooting and there was a victim inside of the  
27 house and our paramedic service was to respond, they wouldn't  
28 just run into the house after the victim without first clearing

1 with police who are in charge of the incident because of the  
2 severity of it, clearing with them that it's safe for them to go  
3 in and do so and actually take care of the patient.

4 So there are agencies that have jurisdiction  
5 based on the severity or the incident they're dealing with. And  
6 in this particular case, a protest was a police jurisdiction, so  
7 we would take -- By-law would not report to police, but they  
8 would certainly take their direction from police if required  
9 because the police were the agency having jurisdiction.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So that was  
11 decided at the outset, that that's the way it was going to work  
12 prior to the arrival of the convoy; right?

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's how it always works for  
14 protests in the City of Ottawa.

15 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so on  
16 Saturday, you're saying that something changed on Saturday; is  
17 that right?

18 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I received notification from the  
19 EOC through regular briefings, and we receive a lot of them,  
20 that, yes, there was -- By-law encountered some difficulties. I  
21 wasn't given all the specifics with regards to what had  
22 happened, but I was told that as a result of that, the stance  
23 has changed and that a red zone's been established, which is  
24 probably concurrent with the red zone that was established for  
25 traffic management, et cetera, and that By-law should not go  
26 into the red zone unless a director approved -- I can't remember  
27 the exact words used, but there is documentation on this -- and  
28 supported by protection of the Ottawa Police.

1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And when you say  
2 the red zone, what did you understand that zone to be?

3                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** So the red zone would fluctuate  
4 throughout the protest based on the amount of vehicles coming  
5 in. So originally, the red zone was, you know, primarily the  
6 downtown core, and then it expanded to include Rideau and Sussex  
7 because of the activity there. It also included Coventry  
8 eventually. And then it expanded up south of Wellington based  
9 on the vehicle location. So again, where the protesters were,  
10 were generally where the red zone would expand and contract,  
11 based on police activity. And so it was fluid, quite fluid.

12                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so what was By-law's  
13 role outside of the red zone?

14                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** By-law's role outside of the red  
15 zone was to continue to enforce City by-laws, recognizing that  
16 if they encountered any vehicles with protest paraphernalia or  
17 any type of suggestion that vehicles were involved in the  
18 protest, which happened in certain hot spots throughout the  
19 city, whether it was the Vanier Church or Bronson Avenue, that  
20 if it was related to the protest, it still required some sort of  
21 police either support or notification that you're going in and  
22 enforcing your laws.

23                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And when you're saying  
24 that there was an integration then with NCRCC, does that mean  
25 that calls to By-law to 3-1-1 were being redirected to NCRCC?

26                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, it depends on the call  
27 because some of them were -- whether it was anti-masking,  
28 pandemic type calls, or whether it was, you know, parking calls,

1 or noise was a big one, obviously, illegal fires, et cetera, so  
2 in the hot zone, following the 29<sup>th</sup>, yes, those calls would go to  
3 Ottawa Police to triage and the NCRCC if they were to be acted  
4 on.

5 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so I just want to be  
6 -- I just want to clarify in your witness statement, just to  
7 make sure I make sure that that is, you know, in line with what  
8 you're saying now. In your witness statement, and we can pull  
9 it up if that's helpful to you, but it says,

10 "OPS directed the City on January 29 to  
11 instruct By-law officers not to ticket  
12 or tow vehicles anywhere in the red  
13 zone without police approval." (As  
14 read)

15 Is that essentially what you're saying about what  
16 happened on January 29<sup>th</sup>?

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, that's a paraphrasing of  
18 what I had been advised of through the EOC.

19 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So this was told  
20 to you through the EOC. Bev ---

21 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- Gooding would have  
23 been the one to inform you of that?

24 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

25 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so that stance  
26 from January 29<sup>th</sup> about the red zone and that By-law was not to  
27 ticket and tow without police approval, that didn't change  
28 throughout the protest; did it?

1           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Well, in the -- the enforcement  
2 stance changed, and I believe it was in approximately February  
3 4<sup>th</sup>, where police wanted to take a more aggressive enforcement  
4 posture and they established a special team where By-law and  
5 police would work together, and just go out and start ticketing  
6 in full force. And so that was called a quick response team, I  
7 believe is what it was called at the time.

8           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right, but the stance  
9 that By-law could not ticket or tow without police approval,  
10 that was maintained throughout the entire protest?

11           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** In the red zone, yes.

12           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** In the red zone. And as  
13 you said, outside of the red zone, if there was some sort of  
14 indication that the vehicle in question was related to the  
15 protest, then the police would make the decision as to whether  
16 or not to ticket or tow; is that right?

17           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct. And if I didn't  
18 say so earlier, it was primarily as a result of officer safety.  
19 You know, our officers are not trained to the level of police  
20 officers. They're not equipped with the same type of tools that  
21 police officers are equipped. They are trained to deal with  
22 contact -- or conflict, but mostly verbal and so, I mean, we  
23 were very concerned about what we didn't know; right? I was not  
24 informed of all of the intelligence that the police had with  
25 regards to the element of the crowd. And what I was basing a  
26 lot of my decisions on was based on what I was seeing south of  
27 the border when, you know, buildings are burning, and riots are  
28 happening, and people are dying. And when we were preparing for



1 a worst-case scenario for this event, that's the image I was  
2 trying to, one, avoid, but, two, prepare for in the event that  
3 we got to that point.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And Mr.  
5 Kanellakos testified yesterday that sometime in the second week  
6 there was an integration between OPS and By-law to ensure By-law  
7 safety. Do you have a sense for when that was; do you know?

8 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** In my head, I believe it was  
9 around February 4<sup>th</sup> where they established those quick response  
10 teams and that's where they would work together.

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And you're saying that  
12 was primarily for by-law officer safety; correct?

13 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** It was for everybody's safety;  
14 right? Our concern is not just for the by-law officers; that's  
15 my primary concern because they're my -- they're not my  
16 officers, they work with me, but I'm also concerned for the  
17 protestors' safety, for police officer safety; there were lot of  
18 people in the protest who weren't angry but there were a lot of  
19 people in the protest who were angry. So, you know, we have to  
20 protect everyone.

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And when 311 calls were  
22 being redirect to NCRCC, was that within the entire municipality  
23 of Ottawa? How did that work exactly?

24 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** I can't speak to how the 311  
25 triaged the calls at that point in time; I know that By-law  
26 would have worked with them directly to say, you know, here are  
27 the, you know, standard questions, you know, questions you would  
28 ask and based on the information you received, it would either

1 go to the police or it would go to By-law.

2 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And are you aware of any  
3 instances in which By-law wanted to act and wanted to enforce  
4 some By-law violation and they were prevented from doing so?

5 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** For most part throughout the  
6 incident and not enforcing what they do for a living was a moral  
7 hit for the by-law officers. They were frustrated that in the  
8 media they were being criticized for not doing their job when in  
9 fact they were told not to do their job and, you know, for the  
10 senior leadership, we understood why that was there. We tried  
11 to relay that to our by-law officers, but yeah, there was a  
12 moral issue and a want to go out and do their job, and they  
13 certainly proved that in the follow-up protest that came to  
14 town, whether it was Rolling Thunder or even on Canada Day, they  
15 enforced a lot of their activities then.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So if a vehicle did not  
17 appear to be related to the convoy, that vehicle could be  
18 ticketed or towed?

19 There had to be some discretion. So if it was in  
20 a no stopping zone, it was towed no matter what, even if it was  
21 related to the convoy because we needed to keep the emergency  
22 routes opened, and they did an excellent job keeping the  
23 emergency routes opened.

24 We did ask our officers to use some discretion  
25 because, you know, the perception of us ticketing our citizens,  
26 you know, of a vehicle and then not ticketing one because next  
27 door it's a convoy, it was just not proper and it wasn't  
28 appropriate. So we did ask them to use discretion and to be

1 careful on when they ticketed citizens that were mixed up in  
2 with the convoy because it just looked like we were taking  
3 sides, and that's not appropriate, and that's not what we were  
4 trying to do.

5 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And quickly, it  
6 appears based on the evidence we've received so far, that there  
7 were numerous fire code violations and other infractions that  
8 would involve fire services, such as open fires in barrels,  
9 stockpiles of fuel, illegal fireworks, et cetera, and not just  
10 in the red zone, but in residential areas as well. So I want to  
11 ask about how fire services, which is also under your direction,  
12 was able to exercise its function within this system that you've  
13 now described where by-law is essentially integrated with the  
14 police.

15 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Exactly as by-law did; it would  
16 go through the NCRCC. There was a fire representative in the  
17 NCRCC in the event that there was a major incident that would  
18 occur; they were able to provide very quick situational  
19 awareness on what the incident is and how they were going to  
20 deal with it from a fire perspective.

21 But with regards to enforcement of the fire code  
22 and open air burning, it was the exact same thing; we would  
23 either receive a complaint through 311 or -- and we would advise  
24 the NCRCC and they would say, you know, we know we have a fire.  
25 They go, yeah, we know it is -- we know there's a fire there and  
26 the police would actually make the decision, do we go in or  
27 don't we go in? Some of it was based on their resources, others  
28 was placed on the criminal element that was holding the fire,

1 but for the most part the fire took -- not their authority, but  
2 certainly direction from the police with regards to it. And  
3 they did it on several occasions where they did go in and put  
4 out fires.

5 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But that was with OPS  
6 support; correct?

7 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Exactly, always with OPS support.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so if fire services  
9 saw potentially a dangerous situation and it wanted to act to  
10 remove that hazard, they had to have OPS support in order to do  
11 that; is that right?

12 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct, and that was seen  
13 with regards to the removal of the flammable liquids at two of  
14 the sites where there was, you know, an accumulation of a  
15 quantity of flammable liquids.

16 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so fire services  
17 never acted on its own authority, like independently from the  
18 police?

19 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Fire services would go out and do  
20 inspections on their own, whether it was under cover or whether  
21 they were, you know -- just to see what they can observe; they  
22 would report back through their chain of command and they would  
23 get direction from the police on when can we go in and deal with  
24 this issue. Report the risk and then let the police identify  
25 when the police had the resources to deal with the risk.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And we're going to  
27 take our afternoon break now, and thank you very much.

28 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Okay, thank you.

1                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. So we'll take 15  
2 minutes and come back at 4:15.

3                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

4                   **THE REGISTRAR:** Recess for 15 minutes. La  
5 commission est levée pour 15 minutes.

6 --- Upon recessing at 4:00 a.m.

7 ---Upon resuming at 4:20 p.m.

8                   **THE REGISTRAR:** Order. A l'ordre. The  
9 Commission has reconvened. La Commission reprend.

10 --- MR. KIM AYOTTE, Resumed:

11 --- EXAMINATION IN-CHIEF BY MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ (cont'd):

12                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Welcome back, Mr. Ayotte.

13                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

14                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** If I can take you to  
15 OTT9778, and before we do, I have been asked if you can please  
16 slow down your answers a little bit -- I am also guilty of this  
17 -- for the purposes of the translation. So I think we will both  
18 try to speak a little bit slower, if that's okay.

19                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Agreed.

20                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Thank you. Okay. And  
21 this is not the document I wanted, 9778? Yeah, okay. Well, it  
22 may be that I have it wrong here in my notes, but in any event,  
23 if we can actually go down, this is -- I didn't want to take you  
24 to this one before something else, so we can go to this  
25 document. That's fine.

26                   So this, my understanding, is a letter that you  
27 wrote to Mr. Paradis, who is the Director of Real Property  
28 Services at Public Services and Procurement Canada; is that

1 right?

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And what was the purpose  
4 of this letter?

5 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** We were trying to get security  
6 around the Cenotaph in that it had been desecrated, you know,  
7 several instances had occurred overnight, and we wanted it  
8 protected, and so I put the request in through the EOC to  
9 contact the federal government to see if they can provide  
10 security services and/or a fence around it so that we can  
11 protect this very important site, at which time I received  
12 notice that yes, they wanted it in writing, so I proceeded to  
13 put it in writing.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So you contacted  
15 them first and they said, "Put the request in writing," and  
16 that's what this is; is that right?

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

18 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And did they provide that  
19 fencing, and did they put that fencing up?

20 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, they did.

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And did this  
22 request come from OPS, meaning did OPS ask you to reach out to  
23 procure this fencing, or was that something the City did on its  
24 own accord?

25 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** It came through me through the  
26 EOC, which has an OPS Sgt. at -- in the EOC. So I believe it  
27 came through the OPS, and that they did not have the resources  
28 to secure and protect the site, and they were asking if the

1 federal government could actually provide that security.

2 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So OPS, through  
3 the EOC, was asking the City to ask the SPC to provide this  
4 fencing?

5 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

6 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So we can take  
7 that down now.

8 I wanted to ask you about towing and towing  
9 capacity. My understanding is that -- and I had a document  
10 ready for that, but it's the wrong one -- in any event, that  
11 there were about 28 vehicles that were towed that first weekend.  
12 does that sound about right to you?

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That sounds correct, yes.

14 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And my  
15 understanding is that most of this towing was directed at  
16 ensuring that the emergency lanes were clear; is that right?

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

18 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And were any heavy trucks  
19 ever towed by the City at ---

20 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No.

21 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- any point?

22 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No.

23 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So any towing and any  
24 towing numbers refers to pickup trucks and passenger trucks,  
25 essentially, passenger vehicles; is that right?

26 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That is correct.

27 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Now, we see later on --  
28 and I think you'll agree with me -- that minimal towing happened

1 subsequent to that first weekend? There were sometimes there  
2 would be no days where -- sorry, there'd be days where there'd  
3 be no towing, and there'd be days where there'd be one or two  
4 vehicles towed. Does that sound about right?

5 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

6 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so we heard that  
7 towing companies were not willing to participate in towing for  
8 various reasons, and that was the reason why towing wasn't more  
9 aggressively pursued; is that right?

10 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Well, there were two issues  
11 there. One is, towing of small vehicles, we were still  
12 accomplishing that, but we had to work within the red zone, and  
13 the emergency routes were staying clear. So I think the  
14 protestors got the message early on that we were going to have  
15 zero tolerance in the emergency routes for the protection of the  
16 citizens and themselves, and the buildings of the City of  
17 Ottawa.

18 And but secondly, is the larger vehicle towing  
19 was the real challenge for obtaining those tow services. And so  
20 we reached out -- well, the EOC again reached out looking for  
21 resources. We were getting it from all different directions.  
22 The police asked the EOC to see if they can make some contacts.

23 The police were also making contact with various  
24 tow companies. They were asking if we had any contact with the  
25 province, so through the EOC again, we were contacting the  
26 province to see if they had resources.

27 The mayor suggested that, you know, Mayor Tory in  
28 Toronto had contacts. We did receive those from the mayor.



1           And again, we would inquire with regards to the  
2 availability of towing. And for the most part, it was no, they  
3 didn't want to participate, and initially, they were  
4 sympathizers, for the most part.

5           The other thing was that it was their client  
6 group, and you know, their reputational risk down the road with  
7 regards to losing those clients.

8           I didn't hear damage to trucks much, but then  
9 they came out and said it was a driver safety issue, and that's  
10 what they kept bringing forward all the time following, you  
11 know, other discussions with them.

12           Any leads we had or any possibilities of towed  
13 were passed down to EOC or sorry, the work was being done by the  
14 EOC to make these contacts. They were provided to the police  
15 and police ultimately made the contacts and got the appropriate  
16 tows to end the protest.

17           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** But the towing that was  
18 being procured or was being looked at was heavy towing capacity;  
19 is that right?

20           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

21           **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And so in terms of the  
22 other towing capacity, towing capacity for passenger vehicles,  
23 the City had that, right?

24           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes. We had those contracts.  
25 They were still willing to do the smaller vehicles. There were  
26 delays in obtaining tows at times, and that caused some issues,  
27 but for the most part, we were able to tow if we needed to tow  
28 smaller vehicles.

1                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right. And passenger  
2 vehicles or smaller vehicles include pickup trucks, correct?

3                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

4                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So the reason  
5 there were 28 tows in the first weekend and very minimal towing  
6 after that, there was no other day where there were double digit  
7 towing? It was one, two, sometimes zero vehicles being towed?  
8 And there is a chart that will be entered into evidence that  
9 shows the number of vehicles that were being towed every day.

10                   Is that because the towing companies that had  
11 been towing that first weekend refused to continue towing, or is  
12 it because bylaw was not requesting additional towing of  
13 passenger vehicles after that first weekend?

14                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** It's not the first thing you  
15 mentioned. It wasn't because we couldn't get the tow trucks.  
16 It was primarily because the emergency routes were being  
17 maintained and they were open. And that's what we normally find  
18 with a major event, is the first few hours, you get a lot of  
19 people who aren't familiar with the closure of the emergency  
20 lanes or keeping those -- the no-tow zones, and then, you know,  
21 they get towed and then the word gets out quite quickly that  
22 those are no-tow zones and -- or tow zones, sorry, and then, you  
23 know, things self-correct, to a certain degree.

24                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So the purpose of towing  
25 was exclusively to maintain emergency lanes; is that right?

26                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That was our priority of towing,  
27 yes.

28                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So if the emergency lanes

1 were maintained, then no towing would take place, generally?

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

3 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So let me ask about  
4 emergency lanes then. I'm trying to -- I want to understand a  
5 little bit about how they worked. So the question is whether  
6 emergency lane -- there was an emergency lane maintained on all  
7 streets, or whether certain designated routes were ensured that  
8 they had an emergency lane, north-south and east-west. Can you  
9 shed some light on that?

10 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes. Only certain routes had  
11 emergency lanes. Again, these were all preplanned, so part of  
12 our planning cycle -- and we do this for all events and  
13 demonstrations -- is we have a City department, Transportation  
14 Department that actually has experts that look at traffic flows  
15 and you know, how to best manage the traffic and the incident.

16 And it's called TIMG, the Traffic Incident  
17 Management Group. And they work closely with police to  
18 identify, you know, how are we going to manage the incident  
19 that's being proposed or coming forward?

20 And they would close certain lanes; for example,  
21 Kent Street was closed completely. There was no emergency lane  
22 on Kent Street. And there were a few other streets like that.  
23 But for the most part, we had the emergency routes that we had  
24 identified through the group were maintained throughout the  
25 protest.

26 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** So if an emergency  
27 occurred on Kent Street, a street that you've indicated was  
28 completely blocked off, so a building in the middle of Kent

1 Street there is a fire or some emergency, how would the  
2 emergency vehicles get to that street?

3 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** We were able to access it  
4 through other streets. So, you know, the streets that are  
5 running perpendicular or parallel to it, the buildings were  
6 accessible by other means.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So ---

8 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** It's not an ideal situation, but  
9 it was the best situation that we could come up with based on --  
10 -

11 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And I assume then  
12 that there would be some areas that would not be completely  
13 accessible. If a lot of streets were closed off completely or  
14 there were several streets that were closed off, then there  
15 would be at least some buildings that would have been  
16 inaccessible to emergency vehicles?

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Every building was preplanned in  
18 that they would -- you know, fire and paramedic service would  
19 look at their CAD and look at what they were dealing with in the  
20 preparation for all of this, and they do it for other City  
21 events such as Canada Day, et cetera. And they go, okay, so how  
22 are we going to get there if there's an incident, and what's the  
23 biggest risk incident that we have in this building. So, let's  
24 say, for fire, it would be a fire, you know, a major fire. And  
25 then how would we access it. And we ensure that we have  
26 multiple access to every building. Even so one street could be  
27 closed but you might still have three other streets that  
28 actually, you know, encapsulate or surround that building. So

1 those buildings were all -- we were sure that we could attend  
2 all of those buildings. It wouldn't be an ideal response  
3 because sometimes you'd want to put your ladder truck, let's  
4 say, on Kent Street to actually bring the ladder or tower up to  
5 access certain floors, and that wouldn't be available. But  
6 there was always a plan to how do we actually assess and manage  
7 these types of situations when we're faced with them.

8                   So we were comfortable from an emergency service  
9 that we could access the buildings that we needed to access,  
10 given any emergency.

11                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And when you said  
12 the CAD, they would look at their own CAD, what did you mean by  
13 that?

14                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, so fire services has a  
15 computed-aided dispatch system, so it's a ---

16                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Sorry, can you repeat  
17 that? Computer ---

18                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Computer-aided dispatch system.

19                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Yeah.

20                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** So it identifies, you know, the  
21 streets, where the hydrants are, the buildings, the height of  
22 the buildings, you know, what the risk is for the building. So,  
23 you know, a hotel would have a much higher risk level than a  
24 government building that's unoccupied, you know, or a government  
25 building that's not occupied in the evenings or on the weekends.  
26 So based on the risk level will dictate how many resources we  
27 actually have going to those calls.

28                   So it's not always just one firetruck going to an

1 incident. In fact, sometimes people will say, "Oh, my god, that  
2 must have been a big fire. There was, like, six trucks going to  
3 it." Yeah, it might have been a false alarm. The reality is,  
4 is those six trucks were required in the event that it was a  
5 real incident, they needed to set up. There are so many  
6 different tasks that need to take place in the initial minutes  
7 to be successful that those resources need to be there.

8 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And in this case,  
9 were there any delays from EMS or fire or ambulance to be able  
10 to access any points within the areas that were occupied with  
11 trucks?

12 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** There were no substantial  
13 delays. We did get some complaints with regards to paramedics  
14 not being able to access, or a paramedic trying to get through a  
15 street, and it was taking a little longer, but we investigated  
16 every one of those complaints to look at it with regards to our  
17 response standards, to see whether or not they still fell within  
18 our response standards. And if they didn't, was it an  
19 acceptable risk, you know, was it reasonable. And we didn't  
20 have any high-level risks that we were concerned with, with  
21 regards to any response.

22 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Now I just want to  
23 ask about the relocation of the trucks as part of the  
24 negotiation between the protest group and the City of Ottawa. I  
25 want to take you to OTT30057. And is this a text message from  
26 your phone?

27 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, it is.

28 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** And it says, "Chris

1 (protester)." Is that the name that you entered for that phone  
2 number?

3 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

4 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And who's Chris  
5 protester?

6 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** It's Chris Barber.

7 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And so in green,  
8 this would be you speaking and ---

9 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

10 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** --- the grey would be Mr.  
11 Barber; correct?

12 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

13 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Thank you.

14 And if I can just take you to page 4 of those  
15 exchanges? So you say,

16 "Are you continuing to try to move  
17 trucks today or has that effort  
18 stalled?"

19 And if we just go up a little bit more, we'll see  
20 -- I just want to look at the date that was sent. If we go up,  
21 yeah, so it's on Tuesday, February 15. Okay. Thank you. We  
22 can go back down.

23 "Are you continuing to try to move  
24 trucks today or has that effort  
25 stalled?"

26 And he says,

27 "We moved maybe 40 yesterday. I wore  
28 myself out yesterday with that. Rested

1 up now and preparing to get at it  
2 again."

3 And then you say, "Thanks, Chris."

4 So we have heard that there were about 40 heavy  
5 trucks that were relocated as a result. Is that your  
6 understanding as well? Is that what Mr. Barber was telling you?

7 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I concur with him that that  
8 was approximate -- or my approximation as well at the time.

9 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And there were  
10 additional passenger vehicles that were towed as well?

11 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, because there were ---

12 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** There were people ---

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** --- trucks and cars and pickup -  
14 --

15 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Right.

16 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** -- trucks. And to move the  
17 trucks, they had to move the smaller vehicles as well, and they  
18 were relocated, not necessarily all on Wellington, but they were  
19 relocated.

20 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. So this 40 number  
21 refers to the heavy trucks only; right?

22 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

23 **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And we know that  
24 shortly after this message, the effort to relocate trucks  
25 stopped or was ended. You also had discussions with  
26 Superintendent Drummond, who I understand was the OPS liaison to  
27 this relocation effort. Did he explain to you why there were no  
28 more trucks being relocated to Wellington at a certain point?



1                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No, he simply indicated that the  
2 police were no longer allowing trucks on Wellington.

3                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. And he didn't give  
4 you an explanation for why?

5                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No.

6                   **MS. NATALIA RODRIGUEZ:** Okay. Thank you.

7                   Those are all my questions for you, Mr. Ayotte.  
8 Thank you very much.

9                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

10                  **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. Thank you, Counsel.  
11 First up is the Ottawa Police Service.

12 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:**

13                  **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Good morning -- good  
14 afternoon, Mr. Ayotte. It'll soon be good evening.

15                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

16                  **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Thank you. I am David  
17 Migicovsky. I'm Counsel for the Ottawa Police Service. I just  
18 want to get some clarification with respect to the relationship  
19 between By-law and Regulatory Services and the police. And you  
20 mentioned a Roger Chapman; is that the name?

21                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, he's the Director of By-law  
22 Services; correct.

23                  **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so if you could please  
24 turn up OTT0359?

25                  And if we scroll down to the bottom of the chain,  
26 there is a draft. Yeah, so if we just stop there. Thank you  
27 very much. In which it indicates -- or perhaps you could just  
28 go up a little bit more, so we can just see. Yeah, it's from

1 Peggy Staruch to Ghislain Lamothe. And you'll see that what has  
2 been sent is a -- I guess a draft release to Ottawa business  
3 partners that has been drafted and is being sent to you  
4 ultimately for review; correct?

5 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I believe I'm in the review  
6 process, yeah, up further up into the ---

7 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And ---

8 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** --- exchange.

9 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** --- and so you'll see, if  
10 we look at the second -- sorry, the sentence that begins,

11 "The OPS will always be available to  
12 respond to any issue of safety you may  
13 encounter by dialing 911. If you are  
14 experiencing issues relat[ing] to COVID  
15 19 and masking, please call City Bylaw  
16 at 311 first."

17 Correct?

18 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I see that that's what they were  
19 suggesting.

20 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so if you then could  
21 scroll up to the next email, just this is the date of Thursday  
22 the 27<sup>th</sup>; correct? So it's the day before the protesters started  
23 arriving. And so just above that, you'll see there's a response  
24 from a Michael Lalonde, I think, at 11:06 a.m. And so Mr.  
25 Lalonde says,

26 "By-law [...] has one area of concern.  
27 The OPS will be available to  
28 respond..."

1 I'm sorry, so it's the same email and he has  
2 highlighted the sentence that says,

3 "If you are experiencing issues  
4 relating to Covid 19 and masking,  
5 please call City Bylaw at 311."

6 Correct?

7 And then you'll see underneath, he writes his  
8 comments about -- I guess he has concerns about that phrase and  
9 he says:

10 "Since this relates to protest  
11 demonstration, Covid 19 complaints are  
12 to be direct OPS for response.  
13 Responding to Covid complaints during a  
14 protest demonstration is a safety issue  
15 for our officers by being subject to  
16 violence. We have made our position  
17 clear over the year that Bylaw Services  
18 does not respond to protest  
19 demonstrations including the activities  
20 surrounding it. Can we change what is  
21 highlighted in yellow."

22 And then if we scroll up above that, you'll see  
23 there's a request for a revised text. And then if you up to the  
24 -- continue scrolling up, please, and then you'll see that  
25 somebody name Tania McCumber has said on January 27<sup>th</sup>:

26 "Below is the email chain regarding the  
27 calls within the demonstration area.

28 Roger advised myself that Kim made the

1                    police aware yesterday at a meeting and  
2                    Roger will reiterate again tomorrow  
3                    morning at his meeting with the  
4                    police."

5                    And I take it you did reiterate that position?

6                    **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I reiterated the position  
7 that we would not be putting Bylaw officers in dangerous  
8 situations that could affect their health or the safety of  
9 anyone around them.

10                    **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And that had been, I  
11 guess, the consistent position of Bylaw for about a year prior  
12 to that, it sounds like?

13                    **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** As I indicated earlier, yeah, it  
14 was the position for all protests and demonstrations. It's -- I  
15 want to say it's always been that but it's been that was for a  
16 long time, as far as I can remember it.

17                    **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** You mentioned that there  
18 were occasions where Bylaw went in with police in these QR  
19 teams. These are quick-response teams, correct.

20                    **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

21                    **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so they would issue  
22 tickets for parking, noise bylaw complaints, and that would be  
23 in the demonstration zone, correct?

24                    **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

25                    **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And in fact, there were  
26 several hundred tickets issued by those quick-response teams for  
27 those type of complaints, were there not?

28                    **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, that's correct.

1                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And we can also see, if  
2 you could be good enough, please, to turn to 10463, OTT. And if  
3 we could just look at the first page. Those are your notes, Mr.  
4 Ayotte; is that correct?

5                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Embarrassingly, yes.

6                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** They're pretty legible.  
7 So if I could just ask ---

8                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** You caught me on a good day for  
9 these because some of my other notes are not that good.

10                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** If I could just ask to  
11 look at number 3 -- sorry, I wonder if we could just see the  
12 date of your notes.

13                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** February 2<sup>nd</sup>.

14                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** February 2<sup>nd</sup>, okay,  
15 perfect. And number 3:

16                                   "The Market was in the red zone but  
17                                   that zone has been shrinking as a  
18                                   result of police demobilizing the  
19                                   demonstration."

20                   So you were able, then, to provide some  
21 enforcement -- bylaw enforcement in that area as well?

22                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct. Kind of like  
23 what I was explaining earlier, the red zone would contract and  
24 expand based on how the protestors -- they would expand on the  
25 weekend and contract during the week because of the amount of  
26 additional that would come in on the weekends.

27                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** I understand that on the  
28 first weekend -- so that would be the weekend starting Friday,

1 the 28<sup>th</sup>, 29<sup>th</sup>, 30<sup>th</sup> -- there were, is it fair to say, thousands  
2 of trucks in Ottawa?

3 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I think our estimation was, you  
4 know, 500 to 1000. Like, it was difficult to tell because of  
5 all the small vehicles as well. If you included all of the  
6 small vehicles, yes, it would be over a 1000.

7 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** My understand was, after  
8 the weekend -- after the first weekend, we've heard somewhere in  
9 the vicinity of 70 percent of those big trucks left; is that  
10 consistent with your understanding?

11 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** The consistent number throughout  
12 the following weeks was around 400 to 500 that actually stayed  
13 behind, and those were big trucks. Those were the tractor  
14 trailers. That number would fluctuate as well because it would  
15 expand and contract, but mostly it stayed consistent because the  
16 trucks moved into the area and stayed there. They chained  
17 themselves together. They made themselves difficult to move  
18 and, as a result of that, they were there for the long haul.

19 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** So that would be about 400  
20 or so, I think.

21 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct, yeah.

22 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And you'd agree with me --  
23 I assume you were following some of this on social media while  
24 it was going on?

25 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I have people send me social  
26 media links. I'm not the social media guru that others are but  
27 I was following some of it on social media, yes.

28 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And you would agree with

1 me that there was a lot of misinformation about what was going  
2 on, what the demonstrators were doing, what they might do?

3 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I'm not sure that under -- that  
4 I can corroborate whether the information I was seeing on social  
5 media was misinformation or accurate information. I wasn't -- I  
6 did report to my office every day, which is City Hall. I was  
7 exposed to the honking every day. I did go out for a walk and  
8 observe certain things. So unless you can give me some specific  
9 information with regards to what the misinformation might be,  
10 I'm sorry, I'd rather not speculate.

11 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Fair enough. We'll be  
12 hearing it from others ---

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Sure.

14 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** --- so that's okay. We  
15 did not have, in Ottawa, 15,000 hotel rooms occupied by convoy  
16 members for 30-day periods, to your knowledge, did we?

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I don't think we have 15,000  
18 hotel rooms in the City of Ottawa ---

19 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Right.

20 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** --- but yes -- no, I don't think  
21 that they were all occupied for the entire duration; that's  
22 correct.

23 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Because, basically, the  
24 core was those 400 trucks, correct?

25 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

26 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** I wonder if you'd be good  
27 enough, please, to look at document OTT10103, and if we can  
28 start at the top, I guess. This is iMessages, I assume, between

1 yourself and Beth Gooding?

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

3 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And Beth Gooding is the  
4 Director of Public Safety? Have I got that right?

5 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct, and she was the  
6 Incident Commander of the EOC.

7 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And this on February 15<sup>th</sup>,  
8 so that's the Tuesday?

9 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

10 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And the movement of  
11 trucks, as I understand, pursuant to the Mayor's agreement, was  
12 on February 14<sup>th</sup>; is that right?

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct. That's when it  
14 started, yes, to move the trucks.

15 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And on the 15<sup>th</sup>, as I  
16 understood your evidence, the police had stopped assisting in  
17 the moving of trucks and were encouraging the truckers to go  
18 home; is that right?

19 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

20 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And on the 15<sup>th</sup>, then, you  
21 were discussing what happened in that agreement, what the effect  
22 of it was, correct, with Ms. Gooding? And so ---

23 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I was trying to obtain numbers  
24 of trucks that had moved ---

25 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Sure.

26 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** --- because that was the key  
27 question that I was being asked from the City Manager and the  
28 Mayor's Office.



1                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so if you'd be good  
2 enough, please, to look at Beth Gooding's message at 1:24 p.m.

3                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

4                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so you'll see you're  
5 asking her about the number that are still there and she says:

6                                   "I think there's about 337." (As  
7                                   read).

8                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Fifty-seven (57).

9                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Three-hundred-and-fifty-  
10 seven (357) but that Chief Sloly had been saying 400 so that  
11 there's a delta of 43, correct?

12                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, so what I read from that  
13 is that the 400 was the original number and now the police were  
14 saying there's 357, so what had moved is 43.

15                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Right. And then we see at  
16 1:26, you tell her that what you're interested in the numbers is  
17 the big trucks and whether they move. That's what you want  
18 information?

19                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

20                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so you tell her at  
21 1:56 -- if you could please scroll down, you tell her that  
22 according to the protesters, I think, they moved about 40 the  
23 previous day; is that right?

24                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

25                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And she said that that  
26 basically aligns with what the NCRCC has said, correct?

27                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

28                   **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And at -- you continue,

1 then, to discuss how many and how it's difficult to count them.  
2 And if you could please look at 4:19 p.m. Just scroll down a  
3 bit. Yeah, so at 4:19, Ms. Gooding says:

4 "Also, confirming again that there was  
5 some weirdness yesterday. When trucks  
6 left spaces, other vehicles got into  
7 the empty places left as the hardcore  
8 protesters are jockeying for position."

9 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's what -- yeah, that's what  
10 she says.

11 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And the agreement, as I  
12 understand it, with the Mayor was that the truckers said that if  
13 vehicles moved they would not be replaced; correct?

14 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

15 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so that seems not to  
16 have occurred.

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah. My understanding is, as I  
18 indicated earlier, that while they were moving some of the big  
19 trucks they had to move some of the smaller pickup trucks that  
20 were, you know, wedged in-between them or beside them, and that  
21 those were probably the ones jockeying for spots after the fact.

22 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so if we then look at  
23 4:57 in that same chain, you indicate you're going to:

24 "...report approximately 175 trucks  
25 remain south of Wellington and 120  
26 north of Wellington..."

27 Correct?

28 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, I believe that's after I

1 actually walked it and counted them.

2 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And at -- if you could  
3 look at 4:25, please. If we just go up a bit. You're talking  
4 about, I guess Ms. Gooding is giving you the county, as best as  
5 they're able to, on the 15th, of the number of trucks remaining,  
6 correct, at the various locations?

7 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

8 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so what we see is  
9 Metcalfe, 70 trucks; correct?

10 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, that's what she says.

11 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And so yesterday, we saw a  
12 picture from the Mayor's Office of Metcalfe and we saw no trucks  
13 on it. But I assume that we were only seeing a one block  
14 portion because there were about 70 trucks still on Metcalfe it  
15 looks like. Is that what you're understanding from Ms. Gooding?

16 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, I don't know if this -- if  
17 these were the numbers that she was giving me before the  
18 movement or after. Like these -- I'm asking her for the  
19 numbers. So I don't know if we can scroll up a bit so I can  
20 just get the context of the conversation before that.

21 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Sure.

22 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** They're using the cameras to try  
23 and identify, you know, what trucks are where.

24 **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Right. And so you would  
25 agree with me that on the 15th there were trucks still on  
26 Metcalfe; correct?

27 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah. I actually walked it, and  
28 a good portion of Metcalfe was clear.

1           **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** Right. And there were a  
2 number of trucks still on Metcalfe, though; correct?

3           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Perhaps south, yes.

4           **MR. DAVID MIGICOVSKY:** And -- those are all my  
5 questions. Thank you very much, Mr. Ayotte.

6           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

7           **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. Next, I'd like to  
8 call on the convoy organisers.

9           **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. BRENDAN MILLER:**

10           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Good afternoon, sir. For  
11 the record, Brendan Miller. I am counsel to the Freedom Corp,  
12 which is an organisation representing the protesters that were  
13 in your city in January and February of 2022.

14           So just first off, I want to talk to you sort of  
15 in your capacity as being the Director of Safety and that sort  
16 of thing, sort of overseeing that department. Can you agree  
17 with me that between January 27th and February 14th there were  
18 over 3,000 tickets issued for provincial and municipal  
19 infractions?

20           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That sounds correct. I'd have  
21 to actually look at the numbers, but we did provide all of those  
22 documents through the disclosure process.

23           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And were some of  
24 those tickets issued by the By-law Office?

25           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Most of them were issued by the  
26 By-law Office.

27           **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And I take it that  
28 during the issuing of those over 3,000 tickets none of your

1 by-law officers were assaulted.

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** There were some contentious  
3 times, and -- so I can't say that none of them were assaulted,  
4 not that I know of.

5 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So you never had  
6 reported to you and no charges were laid against any protester  
7 issued a ticket with respect to physically assaulting a by-law  
8 officer?

9 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No, I just know that a couple of  
10 them got swarmed, but that they didn't get physically assaulted.

11 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. So 3,000 tickets is a  
12 lot. That's a lot of interactions with a lot of protesters.  
13 And not a single assaulting a peace officer charge was laid in  
14 relation to your by-law officers?

15 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

16 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Now, the numbers, I  
17 understand, is that between January 27th and February 14th,  
18 there were a total of 31 arrests made, is that correct, of the  
19 protesters?

20 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** You'd have to ask the police  
21 that. I don't capture those numbers.

22 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. You don't keep those  
23 sort of numbers or you don't capture those sort of numbers?

24 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I don't manage the police, I  
25 manage all other emergency services in the City of Ottawa.

26 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. To your knowledge, is  
27 it not true, again you don't have to -- if you don't have the  
28 information please just advise. To your knowledge, is it not

1 true that only 16 people of the protesters between that same  
2 time period, January 27th and February 14th, were charged?

3 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I can't speak to that.

4 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Thank you. Now, dealing  
5 with some of the stuff with respect to the cooperation of the  
6 leaders of the protest, as well as dealing with the safety lanes  
7 and that sort of thing, is it not true that the protest leaders  
8 were actually concerned about maintaining the safety lanes, and  
9 raised that with you?

10 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** They did.

11 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And they wanted to  
12 ensure that the lanes were open so that emergency vehicles could  
13 always get through?

14 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

15 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And the protest  
16 leaders cooperated with you and the City in maintaining those  
17 safety lanes; right?

18 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

19 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And they maintained  
20 them?

21 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** For the most part, yes.

22 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Yeah. And when new trucks  
23 would even arrive, they even organised to talk with the, what  
24 they referred to as block captains. Did they relay that to you?

25 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No.

26 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** All right. But when new  
27 vehicles were arrived, had arrived, to your knowledge you agree  
28 that they always organised to make sure that those safety lanes

1 were open?

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

3 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** And you did have, I believe,  
4 your fire chief even do an inspection of the Coventry Street or  
5 Coventry?

6 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah. Just for clarity, "the"  
7 fire chief wouldn't have done the inspection, but one of his  
8 chief officers would have. So there are many different chief  
9 levels within the fire service.

10 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And when that fire  
11 chief did the inspection he asked them not to have any open --  
12 he did not, or -- like he asked them not to have any open  
13 firepits; isn't that right?

14 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I can't speak to that. I don't  
15 ---

16 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay.

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I don't know the contents of  
18 that.

19 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. I understand that  
20 you attended a logistics meeting at City Hall on Sunday evening  
21 of February 13th to discuss the trucks' moves?

22 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, that's the only time I  
23 ever met with the organisers of the protest.

24 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Is it not true that at that  
25 meeting the protesters explained who would -- who -- that two --  
26 that two removed camps outside of the city had already been  
27 established outside of the city where they would go to?

28 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** From my recollection, the

1 discussion was around how were we going to move the trucks out  
2 of the residential areas, and that there was limited spots on  
3 Wellington Street. So I wasn't 100 percent sure we could move  
4 all 400 trucks onto Wellington. Actually, I knew we couldn't  
5 move all 400 trucks onto Wellington Street, and that their  
6 agreement, from as far as I was concerned meant that they had to  
7 make sure that those other vehicles left town and left the City  
8 of Ottawa.

9 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay.

10 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** And they said yes, that they had  
11 secured ground or -- and that's farmers' properties outside of  
12 the city.

13 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So that's what I'm  
14 trying to clarify because I'm just ---

15 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah.

16 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** --- trying to be fair to you  
17 because there's going to be evidence about that.

18 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Okay.

19 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** So they told you that they  
20 had set up two camps in properties they were allowed to be at  
21 outside of the city and that they were looking to move there.

22 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, we -- they told me that,  
23 but I was also aware of that through other intelligence reports  
24 as well.

25 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And then the plan  
26 was that vehicles would -- other vehicles would go there and  
27 then there would be some other vehicles that would go to  
28 Wellington; is that correct?



1                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

2                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And the City agreed  
3 to that?

4                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

5                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. Now, if the  
6 protesters were able to move the vehicles on Tuesday and  
7 Wednesday, which is February 15th and 16th, as had been agreed,  
8 can you agree that the result would have been most if not all of  
9 the vehicles would have been cleared out of downtown except for  
10 Wellington?

11                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I can't agree with that only  
12 because I didn't see a lot of protestor vehicles moved except  
13 for the ones we allowed on to Wellington; so there seemed to be  
14 some movement onto Wellington, but no movement out of the City  
15 as was agreed to. So if it would have been a good faith  
16 movement on both parts, then I could maybe agree to that, but I  
17 can't today.

18                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. But isn't it true,  
19 and the Commission has heard evidence, that the move on to  
20 Wellington eventually got blocked?

21                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** It got stopped by police, yes.

22                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. So it got stopped by  
23 the police, so the deal didn't go through because of the police?

24                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

25                   **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. And so if the deal  
26 went through and it was followed, the only vehicles and trucks  
27 from the protestors would have been on Wellington?

28                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I am not confident that would

1 have happened.

2 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Right. But there was no  
3 reneging on the deal on behalf of the protestors at the time and  
4 that's the evidence the Commission's heard today or to date;  
5 would you agree with that?

6 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

7 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Thank you.

8 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** But the delta was, they didn't  
9 control all the people in that block; they said they wanted to  
10 control all of them and they hoped that they would have all of  
11 their buy-in, but they didn't. They had difficulty moving the  
12 40 to Wellington Street because people didn't want to move.

13 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Okay. But the difficulty in  
14 moving individuals to Wellington Street after the agreement was  
15 announced, I put to you was only stopped because the police  
16 wouldn't let them on to Wellington and because the police then  
17 also stopped them from leaving the streets they were parked on;  
18 isn't that correct?

19 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** No, I can't speak to that; you'll  
20 have to ask Staff Sergeant Drummond about that.

21 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** Thank you. Those are my  
22 questions.

23 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

24 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay, thank you. Next  
25 it's former Chief Sloly's counsel.

26 **MR. TOM CURRY:** Thank you, Commissioner, we have  
27 no questions for Mr. Ayotte.

28 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay, next would be the

1 Democracy Fund JCCF.

2 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. ROB KITTREDGE:**

3 Good afternoon, Mr. Ayotte. My name is Rob  
4 Kittredge and I represent the Justice Centre for Constitutional  
5 Freedoms and we have five exciting minutes here together today,  
6 so I'm going to plough through a number of questions.

7 Parking tickets serve as a deterrent to illegal  
8 parking; don't they?

9 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** They do.

10 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** When people know that parking  
11 illegally will get them a ticket and a fine, that deters at  
12 least some people from parking illegally; doesn't it?

13 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, of course.

14 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** I'd like to understand a  
15 little more about how often Ottawa Parking enforcement people  
16 can ticket an illegally parked vehicle in the ordinary course of  
17 business. So let's say just to pick a totally random  
18 hypothetical example, that I parked my car this morning in the  
19 middle of Wellington Street, obstructing traffic, and I left it  
20 there for two and a half weeks. Assuming that for some  
21 incomprehensible reason my car didn't get towed, how many  
22 parking tickets could I possibly find on my windshield at the  
23 end of that period of time?

24 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** That's a very good question and I  
25 don't have that answer for you; I don't know the minutia of the  
26 regulations. My background is the Fire Chief and now I'm  
27 managing all of this, but I don't have that knowledge.

28 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Could a parking ticket be

1 issued daily to an illegally parked vehicle?

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I would have to get that  
3 information for you.

4 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Would you assume that  
5 probably a parking issue could be issued daily?

6 **MR. BRENDAN MILLER:** I believe it could because  
7 the parking infractions, the signs would say you can't park  
8 between a certain period, and then once that time period lapsed  
9 the next day, the time period would start up again.

10 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** So it would be reasonable to  
11 say that at least one ticket per day could be ---

12 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That would be reasonable, yes.

13 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Leaving aside the instruction  
14 from OPS to stop by-law enforcement without police instructions  
15 and accompaniment, it's true that illegally parked vehicles  
16 weren't ticketed anywhere near that frequently during the  
17 protests; were they?

18 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I believe I understood the  
19 question, but I'm going to kindly ask you to repeat it.

20 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Can I just ask you to go a  
21 little slower; I'll even give you an extra minute or two.

22 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Deal. All right, I'm trying  
23 to plough through ---

24 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** I know, but it's ---

25 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** --- five minutes worth of  
26 questions.

27 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** But it's with the  
28 interpreters.

1                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** I get it; the time is tight.  
2                   So tickets weren't issued daily to illegally  
3 parked trucks during the protest; were they?

4                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

5                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** If the City had ticketed  
6 illegally parked vehicles much more aggressively, don't you  
7 think that mounting fines might have persuaded some drivers to  
8 move their vehicles?

9                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** I do not.

10                  **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** You don't think any drivers  
11 would have moved if more tickets were issued?

12                  **MR KIM AYOTTE:** I do not believe that the  
13 protestors were feared -- feared getting tickets or fines.

14                  **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** And not a single driver would  
15 have moved in the face of mounting tickets?

16                  **MR KIM AYOTTE:** I can't say that 100 per cent,  
17 but certainly in my opinion very few would have left.

18                  **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** All right. You said on the  
19 29<sup>th</sup> you were instructed by OPS not to ticket in the red zone  
20 without their okay and accompaniment; on the 28<sup>th</sup> approximately  
21 how many by-law or parking enforcement officers were working in  
22 the downtown area?

23                  **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, I believe that stuffs in --  
24 that information is in the disclosed material; I don't have  
25 that, but it was in the, you know, 10, 15 officers generally  
26 work an area and we would have had that many out that day.

27                  **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** All right. So if those  
28 officers were out they might have needed 10 or 15 police

1 officers accompanying them to do their work in the red zone?

2 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, but on the 28<sup>th</sup> that wasn't  
3 -- like it would have been normal practice.

4 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Sure, but going forward ---

5 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

6 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** --- if they needed police  
7 accompaniment that might have meant 15 officers?

8 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** It might have; I can't speak to  
9 the police operation. They may feel that because of the threat,  
10 that they would require more than one officer and one by-law  
11 officer to attend those situations,

12 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Sure. I understand that in  
13 2019 the City of Ottawa issued about 350,000 parking tickets;  
14 does that sound about right to you?

15 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** That sounds right.

16 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** And 250,000 in 2020 due to  
17 Covid, I guess, which breaks down to about 20,000 parking  
18 tickets per month or about 10,000 parking tickets every two  
19 weeks; doesn't it?

20 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** You did the math; I'll agree with  
21 your math; how's that?

22 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Close'ish; under-estimated.

23 But we've heard that only 1,700 parking tickets  
24 or so were issued in downtown during that period of time; right?

25 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Right.

26 **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Yeah.

27 **MR KIM AYOTTE:** No, sorry, over 3,000 were  
28 issued.

1                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Over 3,000; still that's  
2 quite a bit less than the normal 10,000 or so?

3                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah.

4                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Yeah. Ottawa By-law &  
5 Parking Enforcement officers are trained in dispute resolution  
6 and conflict de-escalation; aren't they?

7                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, they are.

8                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** And they received that  
9 training because in the ordinary course of business it's not  
10 unusual for ticket recipients to behave in a less than civil  
11 manner; isn't it?

12                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

13                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Right. And on any given day,  
14 protest or no protest, it's not unheard of for ticket recipients  
15 to get aggressive with enforcement officers; is it?

16                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** True.

17                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** But no by-law or parking  
18 enforcement officers were attacked or injured by freedom  
19 movement protestors, were they?

20                   **MR KIM AYOTTE:** As I indicated earlier, not that  
21 I'm aware of, except for the swarming.

22                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** And when talking to  
23 Commission counsel earlier, you discussed the difficulties that  
24 the City had obtaining towing services from its standing offer  
25 for towing contractors and others and the efforts made to  
26 procure towing services; did the City consider offering  
27 increased compensation to towing services to encourage them to  
28 provide services?

1           **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Not that I'm aware of.

2           **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** All right. Did the City  
3 consider buying or leasing heavy tow trucks?

4           **MR KIM AYOTTE:** We were looking at all options;  
5 you still need to train the drivers and this was still being  
6 viewed as a specific time frame; right? By the time we bought a  
7 tow truck and we trained an appropriate driver, that would be  
8 one truck and we needed a lot more than one to execute the final  
9 plan.

10           **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** Right. The City never used  
11 its two OC Transpo heavy towing rigs during that period of time;  
12 did they?

13           **MR KIM AYOTTE:** It did not. Initially they  
14 considered but -- but they needed it for their daily operations.  
15 The bus system was still running and the buses were still  
16 breaking down and required towing, so -- and there were also  
17 from the Union, concerns about safety issues.

18           **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** All right. You mentioned  
19 that heavy towing operators were concerned about driver safety  
20 and that was a big reason why services could not be procured.  
21 Light towing operators apparently didn't share those concerns  
22 though since the City's light towing providers continued to tow  
23 vehicles in emergency lanes; didn't they?

24           **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

25           **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** And there were no incidents  
26 of assaults, violence or injuries to towing operators during the  
27 protest, were there?

28           **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Not that I'm aware of.



1                   **MR. ROB KITTREDGE:** All right. Well, thank you  
2 very much; I've gone about a minute and 20 seconds over, but  
3 those are my questions.

4                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. Thank you. Next,  
5 it's the Government of Canada.

6 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MR. ANDREW GIBBS:**

7                   Good afternoon, Commissioner. Mr. Ayotte, my  
8 name is Andrew Gibbs and I'm counsel for the Government of  
9 Canada.

10                  **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Bonjour.

11                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Bonjour. I have about four  
12 documents and above five minutes, so if this seems rushed, it  
13 is.

14                  The first document I would ask to call up is  
15 OTT00010005. And while it's coming up, this is the application  
16 record from the City of Ottawa with respect to the injunction on  
17 February 13<sup>th</sup>/14<sup>th</sup>. Do you recognize this document?

18                  **MR KIM AYOTTE:** I do.

19                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And you provided an Affidavit  
20 in support of this application?

21                  **MR KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I did.

22                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And in your Affidavit you  
23 detail that the demonstrators were breaching City bylaws?

24                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I did, yes.

25                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And that it was stretching  
26 City resources; is that correct?

27                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

28                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** You also state in the

1 affidavit -- I believe it's at paragraph 10, that you had  
2 visited various sites, observed personally and were advised by  
3 operational staff, both bylaw and regulatory services and fire  
4 services to gather the information for the purposes of the  
5 affidavit; is that correct?

6 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

7 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And you swore this affidavit  
8 on February 13? Sorry, if we could maybe go to it? It should  
9 be on about page 4, I believe.

10 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I thought it was the 11th, but I  
11 don't know.

12 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Down two more pages. And two  
13 more, to the actual affidavit starts. Right here. And it's  
14 sworn February 13th, 2022.

15 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Okay.

16 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Do you see that?

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I do, thank you.

18 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And do you adopt the  
19 information in this affidavit as true?

20 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I do.

21 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you. Now, at paragraph  
22 -- paragraph 10 of the affidavit, you state that you're  
23 monitoring, using CCTV cameras and you were doing this out of  
24 concern for public safety and the ability of first responders  
25 and other City services to provide emergency and other services  
26 to downtown and across the City. Do you see that in paragraph  
27 10?

28 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

1                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And so if we turn to -- would  
2 you -- based on the information that's in this affidavit, would  
3 you agree that the situation in downtown Ottawa at that time was  
4 fluid?

5                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Very fluid, yes.

6                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And volatile?

7                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

8                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And unpredictable?

9                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

10                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** If you turn to page 37,  
11 please, this is a series of photographs of Exhibit A.  
12 Unfortunately, it's on its side. This is one of the photographs  
13 taken from the CCTV cameras; is that correct?

14                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

15                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And in the bottom left-hand  
16 corner, it states the location?

17                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, Wellington -- Metcalfe and  
18 Wellington.

19                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Metcalfe and Wellington. And  
20 in the top left-hand corner, the date?

21                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct, February 5th.

22                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** February 5th. And it's, I  
23 believe, 2:00 p.m.?

24                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

25                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** What is the white bar that we  
26 see in the middle of the photograph?

27                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's a boom or a it's a crane.

28                  **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** That's a large crane. Is it

1 an industrial crane?

2 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's an industrial crane, yes.

3 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And are all those trucks in  
4 the background, is that the lineup of trucks on Wellington?

5 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

6 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And did you know what was in  
7 those trucks?

8 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No.

9 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Now, if we go to page 2, I'll  
10 just move off of this document, but I would like to go to page 2  
11 where the list of exhibits are included, and I would commend  
12 this to the Commission, this entire affidavit with the exhibits.  
13 There are a series of photographs of fuel depots at Coventry  
14 Road, the RCGT park. You'll see Exhibit D, photographs of fires  
15 and fuel stockpiles at Confederation Park; Exhibit E, the bylaw  
16 call logs and fire complaints dated February 4th to 12th, 2022;  
17 Exhibit F, CCTV images of fireworks on February 5th, 2022; and  
18 Exhibit G and so forth are the details with respect to call  
19 logs. Is that where the various complaints are registered for  
20 open fires ---

21 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

22 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** -- and parking violations?

23 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

24 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you. So in the  
25 interests of time, I would now like to move to three quick  
26 documents. If we can bring up OTT00004061?

27 You had mentioned earlier that your officers were  
28 directed not to ticket in the red zone; is that correct?

1                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, correct.

2                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And you'd mentioned that that  
3 really came into play on February 4th?

4                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No, the 29th of January.

5                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** The 29th of January? Okay.  
6 This email is from February 4th. Roger Chapman, he reports to  
7 you?

8                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, he does.

9                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And he states specifically, if  
10 you look at the second paragraph:

11                                   "First and foremost, our top priority  
12                                   and responsibility is ensuring the  
13                                   safety of staff. As you have no doubt  
14                                   gathered, this is a potentially  
15                                   volatile situation and there is a  
16                                   significant difference between  
17                                   ticketing illegally parked vehicles and  
18                                   ticketing a person for a violation,  
19                                   where the latter presents a much  
20                                   greater risk of confrontation."

21                   Do you see that?

22                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

23                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And do you agree with those  
24 statements?

25                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I do.

26                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And in response to the  
27 questions you just received from my friend, Mr. Miller, with  
28 respect to the lack of tickets or the number of tickets and very

1 little charges laid for assault, would you agree that where the  
2 directions to the officers were to ticket vehicles and not  
3 people, that is one possible explanation for that discrepancy?

4 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

5 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you. Skipping right to  
6 the bottom:

7 "Again, Officer safety is our first  
8 priority and therefore, we will not be  
9 enforcing other by-law violations in  
10 the demonstration zone at this time."

11 Demonstration zone, that's the red zone?

12 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

13 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you.

14 Next document, OTT00006781, please. These are  
15 listed as updates, EOCCG Update 15 from yourself?

16 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

17 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Do you recognize this  
18 document?

19 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I do.

20 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And would you agree that the  
21 purpose of this document was to provide accurate and timely  
22 information to your City colleagues?

23 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, to my City leadership team.

24 **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** To your City leadership team.  
25 Thank you.

26 The date of this email is Friday, February 11th,  
27 2022, at 7:53 p.m.?

28 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

1                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And in the third paragraph, we  
2 see:

3                               "Evidence of external influence  
4                               persists. The Ottawa Hospital has  
5                               received some disturbing calls, mostly  
6                               from the United States, which have been  
7                               reported to police."

8                   PIMR -- what does that stand for?

9                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Public Information and Media  
10 Relations.

11                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you.

12                               "--- has paused public comments on the  
13                               City of Ottawa's corporate Facebook and  
14                               Instagram accounts for the duration of  
15                               the City's state of emergency due to an  
16                               apparent coordinated effort to spam the  
17                               City's feed with hateful or toxic  
18                               comments including racist comments or  
19                               misinformation and rumours."

20                   Is that accurate information?

21                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, it is.

22                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you.

23                               Last, very quickly, Document OTT00008754. This  
24 is the operational update 24 on February 22nd. Can we have that  
25 document please? It's 8740.

26                               And it references on the third paragraph -- this  
27 is again from you. Do you recognize this?

28                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

1                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you.

2                                   "CHEO received a false bomb threat  
3                                   yesterday evening."

4                   Can you remind the Commissioner what CHEO stands  
5 for?

6                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** It's the Children's Hospital  
7 here in Ottawa.

8                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** So the Children's Hospital  
9 received a bomb threat.

10                                   "While false calls to 9-1-1 have been  
11                                   reduced, there are indications that  
12                                   outside interference persists."

13                   Is that correct? There was a bomb threat to the  
14 Children's Hospital on February 22nd?

15                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, there was.

16                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Now, Mr. Ayotte, do you have  
17 any evidence that that bomb threat was connected to the convoy?

18                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No.

19                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** But would you agree that that  
20 was part of the challenge in these events?

21                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct. We received a  
22 tremendous amount of increased 9-1-1 calls that were also false  
23 during this time, higher than normal amounts of 9-1-1 calls, so  
24 we suspected that it was related.

25                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** And the mayor had testified  
26 earlier today to what he referred to as "Whack-a-Mole". Is it  
27 not correct and fair to say that you couldn't tell what was  
28 coming next?



1                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** I think for the most part, yeah.  
2 We didn't know where they were going to go. We were trying to  
3 be strategic, but it was a difficult time.

4                   **MR. ANDREW GIBBS:** Thank you very much. Those  
5 are my questions.

6                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

7                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. Next is the  
8 Coalition.

9                   **MR. PAUL CHAMP:** We have no questions, thank you,  
10 Commissioner.

11                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay, thank you.

12                   Next is the CCDL and CLA.

13 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:**

14                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** Good afternoon or almost  
15 good evening, Mr. Ayotte.

16                   My name is Colleen McKeown and I'm counsel to the  
17 Criminal Lawyers' Association and the Canadian Council for  
18 Criminal Defence Lawyers. These are two organizations comprised  
19 of criminal defence lawyers.

20                   Many of the questions I have for you have already  
21 been canvassed, so I've been trying to tailor them as we've gone  
22 along.

23                   If I could just pick up on some questioning you  
24 got earlier about sort of the number of tickets overall, over  
25 the course of a year, my friend said perhaps it was 300,000 or  
26 250,000, and you said you didn't have the numbers in front of  
27 you, but you know, that was sort of about right; is that right?

28                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

1                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** And he gave you an estimate  
2 that that could mean something like 20,000 tickets being issued  
3 monthly, is that right?

4                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

5                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** And my understanding, not  
6 having seen these figures myself, well, this would be for across  
7 the whole city ---

8                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

9                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** --- is that right?

10                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

11                  **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** But is it still your view  
12 then that the 3,000 tickets that were issued over the course of  
13 the demonstration, in the demonstration zone or related to the  
14 demonstration, that this would be a -- sort of a smaller  
15 fraction of tickets that By-law Services would have had the  
16 capacity to issue?

17                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, but there were a lot more  
18 infractions in that zone that could have been ticketed.

19                  **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** Right. So there were many  
20 more infractions and this is a smaller number than the tickets  
21 that might have been issued but for the safety concerns you've  
22 already described.

23                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct.

24                  **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** And I understand that By-  
25 law and Regulatory Services received an approval for an increase  
26 to the set fines for various By-law infractions on February 8<sup>th</sup>;  
27 does that sound right?

28                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

1                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** And I know you've already  
2 adopted the contents of the affidavit you swore as part of the  
3 City's injunction application in the course of questioning by  
4 another Counsel, so I'll just draw your attention that you said  
5 in that affidavit that you didn't think that these increased  
6 fines had any impact on the ongoing By-law violations; is that  
7 right?

8                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That's correct.

9                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** And that was the affidavit  
10 you swore on February 14<sup>th</sup>, and I take it that your opinion  
11 didn't change after you swore the affidavit, that there wasn't  
12 some change after that fact?

13                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** My opinion hasn't changed, and  
14 the affidavit was sworn on February 13<sup>th</sup>.

15                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** Right. And, yes, and after  
16 February 13<sup>th</sup>, there wasn't -- those changes from February 8<sup>th</sup>,  
17 you didn't change your opinion on whether they had an impact?

18                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No, my opinion remains the same.

19                   **MS. COLLEEN McKEOWN:** Okay. Thank you very much.  
20 Those are my questions.

21                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

22                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you.

23                   And now to the City of Ottawa.

24 **--- CROSS-EXAMINATION BY MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:**

25                   **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Thank you, Commissioner.  
26 Alyssa Tomkins, Counsel for the City of Ottawa.

27                   Mr. Ayotte, I just have a few questions today.  
28 You had mentioned in your evidence that there was a document

1 that reflected the direction to By-law or to the EOC -- through  
2 the EOC on January 29<sup>th</sup>. I'm just going to take you to that for  
3 the record.

4 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

5 **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** So if we could turn up  
6 document OTT00001270.

7 And if we could just scroll -- next page, please.  
8 Under number three, under section updates, there's a comment  
9 from a J. Gravelle. Who's J. Gravelle; do you know?

10 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** J. Gravelle is one of our  
11 commanders in the incident management system. So he used to  
12 work for By-law Services and now he works for Roads.

13 **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Okay. And it says here,  
14 "(BLRS) were experiencing issues; a  
15 perimeter/red zone has been  
16 established; if BLRS are required to  
17 enter that zone, as directed by the  
18 NCRCC, they will be provided Police  
19 escort."

20 And then we have a comment from K. Cochrane. Can  
21 you remind the Commissioner who is K. Cochrane?

22 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Kelly Cochrane. She is part of  
23 our EOC staff.

24 **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** And she states,  
25 "Police advising BLRS to withdraw  
26 services if they are encountering  
27 concerns; will provide escorts on an  
28 as-needed basis."

1                   Is this the direction to which you were referring  
2 earlier?

3                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, correct.

4                   **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Thank you. There was a  
5 couple incidents discussed last week in the evidence involving  
6 the Chateau Laurier and the Rideau Centre, and I was just hoping  
7 you could provide the Commissioner with additional information  
8 on that. So starting with the Chateau Laurier, are you familiar  
9 with the concern that was raised?

10                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, it was raised directly to  
11 me and we had it investigated.

12                  **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Can you explain to the  
13 Commissioner what happened and what the City's follow-up was?

14                  **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Certainly. Basically, there was  
15 an alarm for a water leak, or a sprinkler head had been knocked  
16 off, and so it was an alarm call for the fire service. We --  
17 the fire service responded with four different trucks from  
18 different directions from different fire stations, which is  
19 normal from a deployment of our resources' perspective. We  
20 don't respond with just one truck. We respond with multiple,  
21 especially for a high-risk setting like a hotel.

22                         On arrival, one of the trucks, you know, got  
23 close enough but didn't get very close and that's what was  
24 observed by the hotel. And they thought, oh my god, if there's  
25 an emergency, you know, they can't get in here. The reality is,  
26 there was three other trucks responding. People were -- the  
27 responders were already in the hotel dealing with the incident.  
28 There was no delay in the response.

1           So, you know, this was a heightened -- a time  
2 where people were very aware of all kinds of different issues,  
3 and it was being raised through us through the BIAs and Hotel  
4 Association that these types of concerns needed to be addressed  
5 because of public safety, their liability insurance, et cetera.

6           So while I understand their fear, the risk of  
7 this call was very low, and we had preplanned that facility  
8 daily, and we've had conversations with the manager since. So  
9 really, from a risk perspective, it was a relatively low-risk  
10 event, but it did highlight that, you know, if there was a fire,  
11 you know, we may not get all four trucks there immediately and  
12 there would be some need for movement of the protest vehicles.

13           So while it was an incident that was looked at,  
14 it wasn't deemed as high risk as it was being first explained to  
15 us.

16           **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Thank you, Mr. Ayotte. And  
17 in relation to the Rideau Centre incident, it might be helpful  
18 if we bring up some -- the email correspondence. If someone  
19 could turn up document OTT00008284?

20           So this is your -- an email exchange between you  
21 and Councillor Fleury. Do you recall this exchange?

22           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, I do.

23           **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** And we had seen your  
24 response, or the draft response prepared last week, but if we  
25 could scroll down and you could just explain the response to the  
26 Commissioner.

27           **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes, can you just go up a bit,  
28 so I can see where that's from, from Jennifer Therkelsen. Okay.

1 Now you can go back down.

2           So in this particular case, you know, it's a  
3 private property, so they could request that By-law come and  
4 remove the illegal vehicles. It was a truck, a construction  
5 type truck that had a legal diesel container in it. So the fear  
6 of it -- you know, as Councillor Fleury indicated last week, you  
7 know, we should have evacuated the Rideau Centre. Well, that's  
8 not accurate because the risk was still very low. So in this  
9 particular case, the police attended initially, looked at the  
10 truck, spoke to the owner, told him he'd have to move it or he'd  
11 be getting a ticket. By-law eventually went out and gave them a  
12 ticket. Rideau Centre wanted it removed. It was one of those  
13 times when getting a tow for a small vehicle was more difficult,  
14 more challenging for us. And as a result of that, it took some  
15 time for us to secure the tow vehicle to come and actually  
16 remove it from the Rideau Centre. And when it finally -- when  
17 the tow truck was finally on route, the owner moved it himself.

18           So the Rideau Centre was frustrated that it took,  
19 you know, a day-and-a-half to actually deal with this issue.  
20 But again, when we're dealing with the whole protest, we're  
21 looking at risk and we're looking at risk-based responses as  
22 well. So, yes, there are -- you know, the Councillor was  
23 concerned about the amount of layers with regards to us having  
24 to get the police involved, and the police coming back, and then  
25 police saying they can't escort By-law because they don't have  
26 the resources. And I could understand that frustration, and I  
27 could understand the Rideau Centre's frustration. They have  
28 valid concerns. From a risk perspective, this was also a very

1 low-risk incident.

2 **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Thank you, Mr. Ayotte. The  
3 last thing I was hoping you could assist the Commissioner with  
4 is the movement of trucks subsequent to the mayor's deal. You  
5 mentioned during your evidence that you went for a walk and  
6 observed the movement. If you could just explain to the  
7 Commissioner what you observed on your walk on the various  
8 streets?

9 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, so -- yes, certainly. I  
10 went down to Wellington just to see, you know, how much trucks  
11 had been moved, and I noticed that they hadn't just been moved,  
12 but they'd been placed in a row where they can park a lot more  
13 of the trucks. And I think that they were doing that to try and  
14 get as much -- as many of the trucks on Wellington as possible.  
15 And so there was still quite a bit of room from, you know,  
16 Wellington from, let's say, Kent Street right down to West JAM  
17 with regards to, you know, the ability to park more trucks.  
18 Metcalf was cleared for the most part. Again, there may have  
19 been a few stragglers here and there, you know, south of  
20 Laurier, but Kent was still packed. So when Councillor McKenney  
21 was walking down Kent Street, she was right. There was no  
22 movement of any trucks on Kent Street. In fact, Kent didn't  
23 clear out until the police started their action to actually with  
24 the public order teams to move out, and then the trucks moved  
25 out quite quickly.

26 And, but, yeah, so my walk was to just -- I'd try  
27 and identify, has any progress been made; is there still room;  
28 and are the protestors actually moving out as well or are they



1 just trying to move everything to Wellington Street?

2 And it was my perception, I guess, that I didn't  
3 see a lot of trucks leaving town. I just saw a lot trying to  
4 get on Wellington St. And again, I can't speak for Officer  
5 Drummond and the reasons for stopping it but I suspect that it  
6 might have something to do with that as well and the negotiation  
7 and the ability of both sides to be able to -- you know, the  
8 give and take factor, so.

9 **MS. ALYSSA TOMKINS:** Thank you. Those are my  
10 questions. Thank you very much, Mr. Ayotte.

11 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

12 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Thank you, Mr. Ayotte. I  
13 just want to make sure I understood what you said about the fire  
14 issue with the Chateau Laurier. And you said they dispatched  
15 four fire trucks?

16 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yes.

17 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** That would be the  
18 appropriate number of trucks, or was that more trucks than what  
19 the appropriate response is?

20 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** That is our deployment for an  
21 alarm call.

22 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay.

23 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** So for -- in this particular  
24 case it was an alarm call, general alarm.

25 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** So, just so I understand,  
26 so when you say it wasn't a high risk, it's because it was  
27 broken fire plug, if you like, or ---

28 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Yeah, sprinkler.

1                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** --- sprinkler. But if  
2 there had been a real fire, that would be a real problem having  
3 not all of the trucks that were dispatched and, presumably,  
4 there would be more trucks dispatched if it were a real fire.

5                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Correct. How it unfolds is,  
6 depending on the information that the 911 -- or that the  
7 dispatch centre, the Ottawa Fire Dispatch Centre, receives, you  
8 know, if it's just a general alarm, then we proceed with our  
9 staffing for a general alarm, and that's enough to get things  
10 started. And then if it is fire, other rigs would be coming in  
11 and they would continue come in. So that's the general-alarm  
12 assignment.

13                   Having -- if it was a fire, if the information  
14 came in that we actually have in fire in one of the rooms, there  
15 would have been several more vehicles responding because it's a  
16 high risk. We would have had 25 firefighters, in total,  
17 responding, so you're looking at eight or nine rigs responding.

18                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** And I guess all I'm trying  
19 to understand is the inability of some rigs to get there would  
20 have been a bigger problem if there had been a real fire.  
21 Because I think what I'm trying to understand is whether when  
22 you said it wasn't serious, it's because it wasn't a real fire  
23 but access would have been limited if there had been a real  
24 fire.

25                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Of course, yes.

26                   **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** And that would have been a  
27 big problem.

28                   **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** And that was the concern of the

1 Chateau Laurier but they were -- they were portraying as, "Oh,  
2 my God, they couldn't get in at all." Well, that was one of the  
3 four trucks. The other three ---

4 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** But you're not saying it  
5 wasn't a problem?

6 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No, I'm saying it's a problem.  
7 It was a problem everywhere with the congestion. Ideally,  
8 there's a reason why we have large roads, so that we can get the  
9 trucks set up.

10 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** And the same thing for  
11 Kent Street. If there'd been, as we saw, I think, yesterday,  
12 apartment buildings on Kent Street that were inaccessible ---

13 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Right.

14 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** --- because Kent was  
15 blocked, that would have been a serious problem if there'd been  
16 a serious fire?

17 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** No doubt. And we plan for those  
18 but, again, we were lucky there were no serious fires.

19 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** Okay. I thank you for  
20 coming. There's just one more. You may some re-examination.  
21 No, there is no re-examination so we're done for the day and we  
22 want to thank you for coming ---

23 **MR. KIM AYOTTE:** Thank you.

24 **COMMISSIONER ROULEAU:** --- and testifying today.  
25 And thank you all for ending it a little earlier  
26 than I thought, and we are back tomorrow at 9:30.

27 **THE REGISTRAR:** The Commission is adjourned. La  
28 Commission est ajournée.

1 --- Upon adjourning at 5:32 p.m.

2

3

**C E R T I F I C A T I O N**

4

5 I, Sandrine Martineau-Lupien, a certified court reporter, hereby  
6 certify the foregoing pages to be an accurate transcription of  
7 my notes/records to the best of my skill and ability, and I so  
8 swear.

9

10 Je, Sandrine Martineau-Lupien, un sténographe officiel, certifie  
11 que les pages ci-hautes sont une transcription conforme de mes  
12 notes/enregistrements au meilleur de mes capacités, et je le  
13 jure.

14

15



16 Sandrine Martineau-Lupien

17